UC Irvine

UC Irvine Electronic Theses and Dissertations

Title

Political and Property Rights Change in Seventeenth-Century England

Permalink

https://escholarship.org/uc/item/2f84g4k4

Author

Dimitruk, Kara

Publication Date

2018

Peer reviewed|Thesis/dissertation

$\begin{array}{c} {\rm UNIVERSITY\ OF\ CALIFORNIA,} \\ {\rm IRVINE} \end{array}$

Political and Property Rights Change in Seventeenth-Century England DISSERTATION

submitted in partial satisfaction of the requirements for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

in Economics

by

Kara Dimitruk

Dissertation Committee: Associate Professor Dan Bogart, Chair Professor Gary Richardson Professor Stergios Skaperdas

DEDICATION

For my grandparents and Meg Sullivan.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

		Page
LIST	OF FIGURES	\mathbf{v}
LIST	OF TABLES	vi
ACK	NOWLEDGMENTS	vii
CUR	RICULUM VITAE	viii
ABS	TRACT OF THE DISSERTATION	X
1 P	olitical Barriers to Changing Property Rights	1
1.		1
1		5
	1.2.1 Settlements and Estate Acts	5
	1.2.2 Data: Estate Bills	8
1.3		9
	1.3.1 Background and Data	9
	1.3.2 Political Barriers: Empirical Analysis	12
1	1.3.3 Mechanism: Sudden Closures of Sessions of Parliament	14
1.4	9	10
1		19 26
1.		$\frac{20}{27}$
1.	o rigures and rapies	21
2 E	conomic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts	39
2.	1 Introduction	39
2.3	2 Background: Settlements and Estate Acts of Parliament	44
	2.2.1 Purposes and Forms of Settlements	44
	2.2.2 Amending and Breaking Settlements	46
2.3	3 Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts	47
	2.3.1 Coding Estate Acts	47
	2.3.2 Types of Acts: Cluster Analysis	49
	2.3.3 Credit and Debt in Estate Acts	55
2.		58
2.	5 Economic Implications	64

	2.6	Conclusion	68
	2.7	Figures and Tables	70
		3 Political Support in the Commons: The Role of Occupations and Elections of Members of Parliament	79
	3.1	Introduction	79
	3.2	Historical Background: Parliament and Development of Political Parties	84
	3.3	Political Support of Members of Parliament: Data and Methodology	89
	3.4	Court and Opposition	96
		O .	100
	~ ~		102
	3.5		105
	3.6	O Company of the comp	109
	3.7	Figures and Tables	110
\mathbf{A}	App	pendix: Chapter 1	127
	A.1	Data Appendix	127
		O	127
		V	130
		O v	130
		6	131
	A.2		133
	A.3	Appendix Figures and Tables	134
\mathbf{B}	App	pendix: Chapter 2	145
	B.1	Data Appendix	145
		B.1.1 Coding Economic and Legal Functions	145
			149
		1	157
	B.2	Appendix Figures & Tables	165
\mathbf{C}	Apr	pendix: Chapter 3	172
			172
		C.1.1 Coding and Description of Main Variables	172
		V	174
	C.2	Appendix Figures and Tables	175

LIST OF FIGURES

		Page
1.1	The Glorious Revolution Improved Reorganization of Property Rights to Land	27
1.2	Sudden Closures of Sessions of Parliament, 1660-1702	28
1.3	Evolution of Estate Bill Introduction after Glorious Revolution	29
1.4	Parliament's Operation if Glorious Revolution Did Not Occur: Counterfactual	
	Success Rate, 1689-1702	30
1.5	Legislative Process	34
1.6	Legislative Life-cycle in Normally and Suddenly Closed Sessions of Parliament	34
2.1	Structure of an Estate Act	70
2.2	Clusters of Clauses in Acts	72
2.3	Geographic Distribution of Estate Acts: Importance of Middlesex and London	77
2.4	Estimated Increased in Returns from an Estate Act	78
3.1	Political Party Affiliations	113
3.2	Occupation and Predicted Political Support: 1660-1685	114
3.3	Elections and Predicted Political Support: 1660-1685	117

LIST OF TABLES

		Page
1.1	Estate Bills: Success and Failure, 1660-1702	31
1.2	Conflict, Political, and Bill Variables	32
1.3	The Effect of Political Conflict on Estate Bill Success, 1660-1685	33
1.4	Effects of Sudden Prorogation on Estate Bill Success: Probit and OLS Result	s 35
1.5	Conflict and Sudden Prorogation: OLS Estimates	36
1.6	Glorious Revolution and Political Conflict, 1660-1702	37
1.7	Glorious Revolution Mitigated Effects of Political Conflict	38
2.1	Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts, 1660-1702	71
2.2	Credit Transactions in Estate Acts	73
2.3	Shift to New Types of Acts after 1688	74
2.4	Rise of the Lower Gentry after 1688	75
2.5	Economic Transactions Authorized By Estate Acts	76
3.1	Parliamentary Meetings: 1660-1702	110
3.2	Members of Parliament: Political Affiliations, Occupations, and Elections	111
3.3	Occupation and Political Support: Multinomial Estimates	112
3.4	Political Support: Heterogeneity Across Commercial Interests	115
3.5	Elections and Political Support: Multinomial Estimates	116
3.6	Occupation and Voting on Exclusion	118
3.7	Elections and Voting on Exclusion	119

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to thank my advisors Dan Bogart, Gary Richardson, and Stergios Skaperdas for their guidance and support to pursue my research interests. Your ideas, questions, feedback, and conversations have been inspiring, encouraged my curiosity, and advanced my thinking.

This dissertation has been challenging and fun to research and write. It would not be possible without the love, patience, and support of my parents, Mark and Priscilla, and siblings, Erik and Anna. You keep me grounded. I am incredibly grateful to Grace and Joe for our Monday dinners and Ginsberg and Wallace for their endless entertainment.

Many conversations and much time with friends and colleagues helped write each chapter, made it less overwhelming, and sometimes even enjoyable. I am very lucky to have had good people with me throughout this journey, especially Sarah Brewster, Sarah Cross, Destinee Davis, Rita Fortner, Tommy Frasene, Cara Gubbins, Sebastian Hohmann, Katie La Bouff, Chris Letterii, Christianne Lopez, Alberto Lopez, Kim Makuch, Kilian Rieder, Schmidt, Angela Terra, Marshall Urias, Vanessa Wall, Megan Wiard, Thales Zamberlain-Pereira, friends from SR, JVC, Fordham, UC Irvine, and family members. I am thankful for the THPE lunch workshop and research group, in particular Arpita Nepal, Pat Testa, Cole Williams, Zach Schaller, Nathan Cisneros, Mark Hup, for being vibrant, engaging scholars and good people to work with.

Chapter 1 benefited from feedback from conference, seminar, and workshop participants at LSE Department of Economic History, SSHA 2017, UC Irvine, All-UC Economic History Graduate Student Workshop, EHES 2017 Conference, CAGE, EHES, & IAS Workshop at University of Warwick, FRESH workshop at Queens University Belfast, EREH Fast Track Meetings, Caltech, and UC Davis and many others. Russell Frankston, Meredith Anderson, and Anna Dimitruk provided excellent research assistance. Portions of Chapter 1 have been published in the *European Review of Economic History* to which the copyright belongs to Oxford University Press.

Chapter 2 benefited from helpful conversations and correspondence with Nathan Cisneros, Julian Hoppit, Ann Carlos, Amy Erickson, Craig Palsson, and participants at the 2018 Cliometrics Society Conference.

Chapter 3 would not be possible without many conversations with Nathan Cisneros and Arpita Nepal. I am also grateful to John Wallis and participants at the THPE workshop and WEHC 2018 for feedback. Asyush Koirala provided excellent research assistance.

I thank the Department of Economics and Global Peace and Conflict Studies at University of California, Irvine as well as the All-UC Economic History Group for generous grant funding, which made data collection for this research possible. Thank you also for being vibrant, intellectually curious research communities. Thanks to the archivists and staff at the Parliamentary Archives, the National Archives, and the British Library for their assistance in data exploration and collection.

CURRICULUM VITAE

Kara Dimitruk

EDUCATION

Doctor of Philosophy in Economics	2018	
University of California, Irvine	Irvine, CA	
Master of Arts in Economics University of California, Irvine	2014 Irvine, CA	
Bachelor of Arts in International Political Economy	2011	
Fordham University	Bronx, NY	

FIELDS

Economic History, Political Economy, Applied Microeconomics

PUBLICATIONS AND WORKING PAPERS

Dimitruk, Kara. 2018. "I Intend therefore to Prorogue': The effects of Conflict in English Parliament" European Review of Economic History, DOI: https://doi.org/10.1093/ereh/hex018.

Dimitruk, Kara. August 2018. "Party and Elections in Seventeenth-Century England," Working Paper.

Dimitruk, Kara. June 2018. "Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts, 1660-1702," Working Paper.

Bogart, Dan, Kara Dimitruk, and Gary Richardson. June 2018. "Parliament, Property Rights, and London's Expansion: 1700-1830," Working Paper.

GRANTS AND AWARDS

2018: WEHC Travel Grant

2017: Economics Merit Fellowship, Department of Economics, UCI; GPACS Research Grant; All-UC Economic History Research Grant; Summer Research Fellowship, Department of Economics, UCI

2016: Economics Merit Fellowship, Department of Economics, UCI; All-UC Economic History Research Grant; Department of Economics Outstanding Teaching Assistant; Summer Research Fellowship, Department of Economics, UCI

2015: Summer Research Fellowship, Department of Economics, UCI; Associated Graduate Students Travel Grant; Workshop Fellowship, Ronald Coase Institute

RELEVANT EXPERIENCE

Research Assistant 2014

Associate Professor Dan Bogart

Program Assistant & Volunteer Coordinator Street Roots & AmeriCorps 2012-2013 Portland, OR

TEACHING EXPERIENCE

Instructor
University of California, Irvine
Irvine, CA

Course: Global Economy

Teaching Assistant University of California, Irvine 2013-2018 Irvine, CA

Courses: Urban Economics I (2015), Urban Economics II (2018), Economic History of Western Europe (2016, 2017), Basic Microeconomics (2016), Basic Macroeconomics (2013, 2015), Cultural Economics (2013, 2014), Global Economy (2014, 2015), Global Cultures and Society (2013, 2014), Economics of International Business (2016)

SELECTED CONFERENCE AND SEMINAR PRESENTATIONS

2018: Cliometrics Society Annual Meeting, World Economic History Congress

2017: LSE Department of Economic History Graduate Student Seminar; Social Science History Association Annual Conference; All-UC Economic History Graduate Student Workshop; EHES Annual Conference; CAGE, EHES, & IAS Summer School, University of Warwick; FRESH Workshop, Queen's University Belfast; EREH Fast Track Meetings; Graduate Student Conference, GPACS, UCI; Early Modern Group Annual Meeting, Caltech

2016: '100 Flowers' Conference, All-UC Economic History Group, UC Davis; EHA Annual Meeting (poster); Institutions in Context: Money in Politics Workshop, University of Tampere, Finland; Cliometrics Society Annual Meeting (participation); Conflict & Development, All-UC Economic History and GPACS, UCI

2015: Ronald Coase Institute Workshop on Institutional Analysis, Tel Aviv, Israel

ABSTRACT OF THE DISSERTATION

Political and Property Rights Change in Seventeenth-Century England

By

Kara Dimitruk

Doctor of Philosophy in Economics

University of California, Irvine, 2018

Associate Professor Dan Bogart, Chair

The political and institutional changes in late seventeenth-century England and their role in its subsequent development have been the subject of much debate. The focus has largely been on constraining the executive, constitutional change, and security of property rights. This dissertation provides novel insight to the political economic changes from 1660 to 1702 using new datasets and the tools of applied economics. It is organized as three self-contained chapters on different dimensions of politics and property rights change of the period. All offer more general lessons on these fundamental factors influencing economic development.

The first chapter studies the impact of conflict between the monarch and parliament on parliament's capacity to provide legislation that reorganized property rights to land use, so-called estate acts, for individual landholding families. I collect a new dataset on the population of estate bills and their legislative life-cycle from primary sources as well as create proxies for political conflict to study the effect of conflict on bill success. I first show that fiscal conflict caused estate bills to fail by leading the monarch to suddenly close parliament. The conflict created a political barrier to parliament's functioning and ability to reorganize property rights. Second, I show that political and institutional changes with the Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of this conflict and in turn improved parliament's capacity to reorganize rights.

Chapter 2 focuses on property rights change by studying the economic and legal functions of estate acts. I examine the individual clauses of a random sample of estate acts collected from the Parliamentary Archives for the period from 1660 to 1702. I first document that were four main types of acts that reorganized property rights for economic purposes, such as refinancing a family's estates (pay debts) and exploiting new opportunities made possible by England's growing economy. Second, I find that the composition of estate acts evolved over time. The evolution is connected to the rise of strict settlements and the Glorious Revolution of 1688. Last, at odds with the literature, I find estate acts had large economic benefits for property markets and families in part because they allowed economic transactions in London and Middlesex and were for members of the lower gentry.

The last chapter studies how the occupations and elections of Members of Parliament (MPs) influenced their political support. I use a new panel dataset of the population of MPs elected from 1660 to 1702 and multinomial logit models to examine the choice to support different political parties: the Court and Opposition from 1660 to 1685 and the Tories and Whigs from 1689 to 1702. First, the evidence for the Court and Opposition is consistent with the monarchs' attempt to build support in parliament through patronage with the Court and the growing importance of elections for the Opposition during this era. Second, I provide evidence that there was continuity and change in the occupational and electoral support from the Court to the Tories and the Opposition to the Whigs after 1688. The evidence is consistent with the argument that the Glorious Revolution led to a new political economic equilibrium.

By way of a conclusion, this dissertation offers more general lessons. It provides insight to how the Glorious Revolution improved England's state, in particular legislative, capacity to reorganize property rights. It also highlights the importance of this capacity to reorganize feudal (or traditional) rights to resources as economic opportunities changed throughout the preindustrial era. But first, our friends from Pearl Jam...

Chapter 1

Political Barriers to Changing

Property Rights

1.1 Introduction

The evolution of property rights institutions is crucial for economic development. They are at the heart of economic activity in modern societies. For example, titling agencies and deeds registries provide records of ownership and allow land to be securely bought and sold. These agencies help solve insecurity in ownership - moving from possession to property - but also make it easier to transfer ownership. Other types of rights structures, such as communal or familial-based property rights, can be secure and formal. They can, however, prevent land from being traded or used in new ways. How to reorganize and change these types of property rights to improve economic outcomes poses challenging questions for economists and policy makers because it often requires the involvement of state and political actors. This structure raises at least one fundamental question: how do politics influence the provision of property

¹See especially Lamoreaux (2011).

rights services and therefore economic development?

I study this question by analyzing how politics influenced the reorganization of property rights in seventeenth-century England. Property rights to land in preindustrial England were a problem. It was difficult to trade or use land in new ways because land use was restricted by a family-based inheritance system and norms. Rights could not be changed easily and could not be adjudicated in the common law system.² Property holders, however, could petition parliament for a so-called estate act, which would break restrictions and allow land to be sold, leased, and mortgaged. Estate acts were also important to parliament. They made up the single largest category of its legislative output for this period.

The lessons from this particular period in English history, from 1660 to 1702, loom large in the economic history, political economy, and development literatures. This period is often cited as a celebrated historical example of when a society got "good" political and property rights institutions that in turn allowed it to become the first country to industrialize.³ There are several hypotheses regarding why this period served as the institutional origins of the Industrial Revolution. One argument is that the regime change improved the government's credibility and made property rights secure. It did so by constraining or otherwise shifting power away from the monarch to parliament, a relatively more representative institution.⁴

²See Clark (1996), Epstein (2000), Hoppit (2011), Bogart and Richardson (2009, 2010, 2011), and Hodgson (2017) for perspectives on property rights in England. While work has emphasized the importance of the common law system for England's economic development, England's equity and inheritance system has been relatively understudied by economists. For an example of work highlighting the importance of the common law system, see Glaeser and Shleifer (2002).

³See North and Weingast (1989) for the seminal work on the Glorious Revolution's role in improving England's political institutions. See also Acemoglu, Johnson, and Robinson (2005a) and Besley and Ghatak (2010) for examples of work using this period as evidence of how political and property rights institutions influence development.

⁴See Epstein (2000) for a summary of the framework and Introduction in Coffman et al. (2013) for an overview of how the literature has developed and advanced since North and Weingast (1989). Much work has focused on how government credibility improved England's ability to fund public debt. The literature is extensive, with recent work focusing on how multiple types of commitment mechanisms are necessary to make sovereign debt "relatively accessible, safe, and liquid investment vehicle" (Coffman et al. 2013: 17). I highlight a different strand of work showing that private property rights to land in England were secure from predation by the monarch, but that they were feudal and restrictive during this era (Clark 1996; Epstein 2000; Hodgson 2017). The Glorious Revolution did however improve security and enforcement of property rights, and therefore investments, for larger scale projects (Bogart 2011; Cox 2012). Regarding important political

The framework has been further developed and refined in light of new evidence, but still remains incomplete especially in regards to if and how the Glorious Revolution influenced England's property rights regime.

I show the Glorious Revolution enhanced parliament's operation and passage of estate acts by mitigating the effects of political conflict in government. The political changes allowed parliament to pass more estate acts, which released more property from restrictive institutions. This evidence supports an alternative hypothesis regarding the importance of the Glorious Revolution in England's development: the political changes enabled part of English property rights institutions to be adaptable as it industrialized and urbanized.⁵

I construct two datasets to study politics and property rights during this period. The first is a new dataset of the population of estate bills introduced in parliament from 1660 to 1702. I end the analysis in 1702 because there were a series of organizational changes to the process for passing estate bills which further streamlined and standardized its procedures.⁶ The dataset contains detailed information on when parliament worked on estate bills, the types of property holders coming to parliament, and legal types of bills. The second is a newly constructed political dataset that allows me to study the politics of this era. It contains information on indicators of political conflict that impacted parliament's passage of estate bills and other macro-political variables that could also influence how parliament legislated.

Using probit and OLS models of bill success, I first show that conflict between the monarch and parliament created a political barrier to passing estate bills from 1660 to 1685. Specifically, conflict over fiscal issues caused bills to fail. The evidence suggests conflict operated through a specific mechanism: it led the monarch to suddenly close sessions of parliament. I use detailed information on when parliament worked on bills (their so-called legislative life-

and constitutional changes, Cox (2012) also argues and provides evidence that the Glorious Revolution made the monarch credibly respect parliament's constitutional rights.

⁵Bogart and Richardson (2011).

⁶See William (1948) on standing orders and how they changed parliamentary procedure.

cycle) to show that the effect was causal. For example, there is no evidence of an anticipation effect (how quickly parliament passed estate bills) leading up to the closure event.

Second, I show that the Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of this conflict. Political conflict still occurred after 1688, but political and institutional changes with the Glorious Revolution made the types of conflict examined here less common and sudden closures less likely. Figure 1.1 shows the implications of mitigating this conflict. Both the average success rate of estate bills - bills that were approved by the House of Commons, House of Lords, and the monarch - and the number of bills introduced improved after 1688. These findings support that the Glorious Revolution made the monarch credibly respect parliament's constitutional rights (Cox 2012). Parliament's functioning not only improved because they were able to pass and work on more estate bills, but it adapted to the new regime. Prior to the Glorious Revolution, estate bills were introduced within the first fifty days of a session. After 1688, with sudden closures less likely, improved probability of bill success, and more time in sessions, there was an evolution in bill introduction. By the end of the period of study, most bills were introduced after the fiftieth day a session met. Improving parliament's capacity to work on more estate bills later in sessions may have also allowed it to to work on other types of economic bills, for example bills changing rights regarding transportation authorities (e.g. turnpike trusts), that were previously impossible in the high conflict, low success regime.⁷

This paper makes three contributions. First, it provides the most comprehensive evidence thus far on how the Glorious Revolution was important for England's political and economic development. While most work has used structural break tests, I use a comprehensive and detailed dataset on politics that spans the regime change.⁸ I also improve on previous outcomes that have been used in the literature by studying a legislation that was important

⁷See Bogart (2011) and Bogart and Richardson (2011) for so-called statutory authority acts.

⁸Murrell (2017) provides a battery of structural break tests on proxies for economic activity to study the processes of institutional change more generally. There has been less quantitative work on politics that includes the Glorious Revolution. See, for example, Harris (1993) and Stasavage (2007).

for economic activity and captures how well parliament operated. Second, the findings inform our understanding of underlying property rights and economic problems, which is crucial for designing and implementing appropriate policies. England's legal institutions made property rights to land relatively secure, but it had to solve how to effectively reorganize property rights in response to new economic opportunities. Parliament's ability to provide legislation was a crucial aspect of this system. Last, this paper provides insight to how resolving or mitigating the effects of conflict in governments can improve state capacity. States with the most capacity to provide public goods and services that support economic activity modernized first in the preindustrial era. I provide detailed evidence on how English parliament's capacity transformed by mitigating conflict.

1.2 Changing Property Rights to Land: Background and Data

1.2.1 Settlements and Estate Acts

Elizabeth Montagu, widow, petitioned parliament for an estate act in 1690 to make building leases for 31 years for her estate in Stepney in East London. After the death of her husband, Edward Montagu (an esquire), she did not have the legal right to make leases that would

⁹Work has used the evolution of interest rates or the evolution in the duration and frequency of parliamentary meetings for evidence that parliament effectively constrained the executive after 1688. Clark (1996) and Sussman and Yafeh (2006) examine interest rate and price changes. Randall (1916) details the evolution of constitutional changes to parliamentary meetings. See also van Zanden et al. (2012) for parliamentary meetings or activity. Work has documented that parliament's legislative output increased dramatically after the Glorious Revolution, but has not studied the specific reasons why this occurred. See Hoppit (1996), Bogart and Richardson (2011), Hodgson (2017).

¹⁰See, for example, Demsetz (1967), Coase (1974), De Soto (2000), Besley and Ghatak (2010), Lamoreaux (2011), Libecap and Lueck (2011).

¹¹See Bogart and Richardson (2011) on parliament as an elastic or adaptable institution. See Hoppit (1996, 2011), Hodgson (2016), and Mokyr and Nye (2007) for related perspectives on parliament and property rights. ¹²See Besley and Persson (2011) for state capacity and development.

¹³See Epstein (2000), Dincecco (2011), Johnson and Koyama (2014; 2017) for historical perspectives on state capacity as well as van Zanden et. al. (2012) for functioning parliaments.

allow tenants to repair and maintain the buildings. She cited that, without the proper contract, tenants were not maintaining the housing and a selection problem: the most "able sort[s] of tenant[s]" were leaving to other places: they "have not only neglected to repaire their Houses [...] they can have noe certeine Estate in their Houses to manage their trades soe begin to withdraw themselves to houses in other places and doe suffer the premisses to lye in a very ruinous condition." The Act went on to describe a persistent effect of the property rights:

soe that the said Elizabeth is forced to expend severall great summes of money in repairing the same and when they are repaired the best and most able tenants for the reasons aforesaid doe refraine to take them by reason whereof those that are let are lett of under values and many of them remaine without tennants and more are like to doe soe which will greatly lessen and impaire the said Widdows Estate (Montagu Estate Act, 2&3 W&M, c. 9).

Rebuilding and construction in the area ensued after receiving the act that gave her the right to make leases. Two new streets and squares were constructed from 1703 to 1708.¹⁴

The description in Elizabeth Montagu's act is illustrative of the problems created by England's preindustrial property rights regime. Land and permanent fixtures, such as buildings and mines, were bound by a set of inheritance institutions and norms, known as family settlements and in particular strict settlements.¹⁵ Family settlements were contracts that (1) ensured that a family's estate would descend across generations and (2) provided for extended family members. It "provided a framework, a constitution, for the family and estates" (English and Saville 1983). To carry out these goals, the settlement would assign stipends for family members and create an entail that specified a line of inheritance for the estate. Settlements, depending on the type and legal status of the entail, created constraints to using land in new ways and transferring property.

¹⁴ The Halifax estate in Spitalfields', in Survey of London: Volume 27, Spitalfields and Mile End New Town, ed. F H W Sheppard (London, 1957): 237-241. British History Online http://www.british-history.ac.uk/survey-london/vol27/pp237-241 [accessed October 2017].

¹⁵This section draws on English and Saville (1983), Bogart and Richardson (2009), and Bonfield (1983).

Property holders decided to *settle* land or restrict their rights. Life tenants had to fulfill the terms of the stewardship but had restricted powers to charge estates, make or renew leases, sell, exchange or mortgage land after it was settled. The restrictions could ensure that resources were not dissipated by the current life tenant and that any future life tenant did not put other family members' interests at risk. There was a trade off between insuring against risk from uncertain future outcomes and flexibility to use resources in new ways in this type of property right.¹⁶

There were a variety of ways a settlement increased costs of trading or using land in new ways. First, life tenants or landholders could not easily convey or transfer ownership of settled land to third parties. A buyer of settled land may not be secure in his or her title because settlements were not public records and any remote family member with an estate could dispute the purchase far into the future. Second, life tenants could not easily use or improve their resources, like mines, timber, or buildings, because their powers were too restrictive or unknown. Landholders were held liable if they carried out transactions without the proper powers. Third, if an economic opportunity for improvement arose or there was an interested third party to sell the land to, the rights and powers could not immediately be changed to respond to the new opportunity: "No part of the settlement could be broken" unless the life tenant and tenant in tail came of age (turned 21) or by Act of Parliament.¹⁷

¹⁶In preindustrial England, this type of structure and problem is also seen in land held in common. The enclosure movements were one way of reorganizing these rights to allow for greater flexibility in land use. See Hodgson (2017) on the evolution of feudal rights in preindustrial England and Bogart and Richardson (2011) for how enclosure acts. This type of rights structure was common in preindustrial societies and is still found in developing regions. For example, work has studied the implications of familial rights for land use in Haiti's development and tenure insecurity in Ghana. See Palsson (2016) for Haiti and Aryeetey and Udry (2010) for Ghana.

¹⁷When the tenant in tail turned 21 the tenant in tail and his father or other life tenant used the legal process called a common recovery to break the restrictions (English and Saville 1983: 23). A family could wait to break restrictions at a time of re-settlement or possibly go to Chancery, but these were prohibitively expensive alternative forums or options to change rights (Bogart and Richardson 2009: 14-16).

Parliament provided estate acts as a service to its constituents - land and property holding families. ¹⁸ Estate acts could legally remedy any problem created by a settlement. They could authorize transactions and help landholders convey land and use resources in new ways. It did so by reorganizing the property rights, compensating beneficiaries, and revealing information relevant to conveying land (Bogart and Richardson 2009). The text of the acts themselves created clear evidence on the property rights in question that could be used in a court of law. After a series of procedural changes beginning in 1702, the parliamentary process for passing estate acts was streamlined and relatively inexpensive (Bogart and Richardson 2009: 19-22). ¹⁹ How the parliamentary system worked from 1660 to 1702, a crucial era in English political and economic history, however, is largely unknown. I show that politics between the crown and parliament was a key factor influencing parliament's work on estate bills.

1.2.2 Data: Estate Bills

I construct a new dataset on the population of estate bills introduced in parliament from 1660 to 1702. The estate bill data contains information on all of the intermediate stages of estate bills' passage, their so-called "legislative life-cycle," collected from the *Journals of the House of Lords* and *Journals of the House of Lords*. An estate bill had to be approved by both the House of Commons and the House of Lords and receive the royal assent by the

¹⁸As a constituent service, they are most similar to regulatory exceptions for geographic constituencies (Baron 1994). The bills had concentrated benefits for families, land markets, and Members of Parliament (MPs) representing those constituencies. The bills had diffuse costs, perhaps time costs of working on the legislation relative to more general legislative alternatives, to MPs. Historians and legal scholars have also noted similar patterns: estate acts were "unlikely to cause broad problems [...] as Maitland put it [...] 'A vast majority of statutes he would class rather as *privilegia* than as *leges*" (Hoppit 1996: 118).

¹⁹On changes in parliamentary procedure, see William (1948). Parliament served as a forum where life tenants could respond to changing economic opportunities by the beginning of the 18th century. There is a debate on this framework, however. See McCahill (2013) for an overview and recent evidence.

²⁰I compiled the set of estate bills from Hoppit (1997) and Bogart and Richardson (2010). The *Journals* were parliament's official record book of both Houses' business for a given day. For estate bills, the entries are usually recorded as edited summaries of the intermediate stages of the legislative process. Further details are found in Appendix Section A.1.1.

monarch to be successful and become an Act of Parliament.²¹

Table 1.1 reports summary information on estate bills. From 1660 to 1702, most bills (67%) passed the entire legislative process and became Acts of Parliament (Panel A of Table 1.1). Estate bills could fail because they were rejected by parliament. Panel B shows parliament rejected 26% of failed bills as recorded in the *Journals*. A rejection is when the *Journals* record that the bill was rejected or failed by a vote.²² Most bills (about 55%), however, were still active when a session was ended. Bills could also be re-introduced in multiple sessions. I therefore code bills as "projects" that capture this re-entry and exit. I code projects as bills that were re-introduced with the same family name and the same legal and economic type. Panel C shows that most projects are bills: 77% only enter a session of parliament once. In the analysis below I examine why a project is re-introduced.

1.3 Political Barriers in Seventeenth-Century England

In this section, I show political conflict caused estate bills to fail from 1660 to 1688 under the late Stuart monarchs Charles II and James II. This is largely because conflict led the monarch to suddenly close sessions of parliament.

1.3.1 Background and Data

Political conflict between the monarch and parliament created a barrier to parliament's passage of estate bills. Conflict stemmed from: (1) the monarch's power over parliamentary meetings, (2) parliament's power of the purse ("supply"), and (3) its general legislative

²¹The stages of the legislative process are shown in Figure 1.5. The monarch could veto a bill, but this was used only 4 times on estate bills during this period.

²²The evidence from the *Journals* and committee notes from the House of Lords suggest that rejections occurred when the proposed project did not meet legal requirements or beneficiaries were not compensated from the proposed project.

functions (Ogg 1962; Horwitz 1977; Smith 1999). The monarch had broad powers over parliament's meeting after the passage of the Triennial Act of 1664.²³ The monarch had the power to call and dissolve *parliaments*, requiring general elections. The monarch also had the power to call and end (prorogue) a *session of parliament*. All legislation had to be approved during a session of parliament.

The monarch generally called parliaments and sessions of parliament to receive tax revenue from parliament, which held the power of the purse. There were two sources of income for the monarch (1) permanent or ordinary revenue from customs and excise taxes and (2) extra parliamentary grants of revenue from additional taxes.²⁴ Parliament passed hereditary or ordinary revenue at the beginning of a monarch's reign. Monarchs' independence from parliament depended on their income from ordinary revenue as well as the terms of the bill. Both hereditary revenue bills and extra parliamentary tax bills were legislated on during single sessions.

The monarch opened a session of parliament by making a speech in parliament and requesting tax revenue or "supply." Once convened, parliament as an organization had legislative, judicial, and administrative functions that were essential to the workings of the English state. While in session, parliament began legislating on tax or revenue bills, the House of Lords heard court cases as the highest appellate court, and both Houses began legislative work on two general classifications of bills. They received petitions for and introduced (1) private bills, for example, estate bills, and (2) public bills, for example, regarding religion and trade.²⁵

There were conflicts between the monarch and parliament over fiscal issues - tax or revenue

²³At the end of the seventeenth century, the royal prerogatives over parliament were still real powers. The Act of 1664 repealed the previous Triennial Act of 1641, which had a far more detailed and "vigorous wording" regarding the monarch's powers (Randall 1916: 655-657, 663).

²⁴See Braddick (1996) and Chandaman (1975) for evolution of taxes and fiscal capacity in England and Chapter 12 in Ogg (1962) for an overview of the methods of parliamentary taxation.

²⁵See Hoppit (1996) for different types of parliamentary legislation as well as Tables 3 and 4 for general patterns in content during this era.

bills - and over general policies. Historians note that parliament used the power of the purse in a strategy known as "redress before supply" where parliament presented its grievances to the monarch, expecting redress, and not passing a tax or supply bill until the grievances were acknowledged or remedied. They could also use the strategy to pass other general bills. This was a tactic acknowledged by Charles II, James II, and William III, three of the monarchs who ruled from 1660 to 1702. For example, James II, in a speech to parliament, criticized the argument "from the Inclination men may have for frequent Parliaments" to grant revenue to king "by feeding [him] from Time to Time, by such Proportions as they shall think convenient." This strategy was not always effective (Smith 1999: 61). In particular, conflict and debates in parliament that were exogenous to estate bills could make the monarch more likely to directly interfere with parliamentary proceedings by suddenly closing the session.

To study the effect of conflict on parliament's functioning and passage of estate bills, I draw on the historical and economic history literatures and code two indicators of political conflict. These variables are summarized in Panel A of Table 1.2. They are not mutually exclusive. The first is an indicator for sessions that had fiscal conflict: specifically, conflict over or delaying the passage of revenue bills (ConflictRevenue). For example, parliament investigated the administration of finances rather than passing a new revenue bill during a session under Charles II in 1669 (Ogg 1962: 342). The second is an indicator for sessions that had conflict with the monarch's policies or interests (ConflictMonarch). It occurred when there was disagreement in parliament regarding a royal policy or legislation was initiated that was divergent from royal interests. For example, under Charles II, parliament began work on a bill that would influence the succession of the monarchy by requiring heirs to be raised as Protestant.

²⁶They are recorded as criticizing this strategy (Smith 1999: 60; Horwitz 1977: 42).

²⁷'House of Lords Journal Volume 14: 22 May 1685', in Journal of the House of Lords: Volume 14, 1685-1691 (London, 1767-1830): 9-12. British History Online http://www.british-history.ac.uk/lords-jrnl/vol14/pp9-12 [accessed September 2018].

A third variable - the monarch's permanent income stream - captures the monarchs' financial independence from parliament. The monarchs received income from indirect tax sources of customs and excise that was independent of extra revenue granted from parliament. Increases in the monarchs' permanent revenue was thus dependent on the state of trade. IndirectRevenue is a series of indirect revenues from O'Brien and Hunt's data on English revenues from the European State Financial Database available at www.esfdb.org. With increases in the monarch's permanent revenue (increasing IndirectRevenue), the monarch was more financially independent and thus may have been more likely to be in conflict with parliament.

1.3.2 Political Barriers: Empirical Analysis

To examine if political conflict caused estate bills to fail from 1660 to 1685, I use probit and OLS models of the form:

$$Act_{it} = \pi_0 + \pi_1 ConflictRevenue_t + \pi_2 ConflictMonarch_t + \pi_3 IndirectRevenue_t + X'_t \delta_1 + X'_{it} \delta_2 + \nu_{it},$$

$$(1.1)$$

where Act_{it} is equal to 1 if a bill became an Act of Parliament and 0 if it failed for sessions t meeting from 1660 to 1685.²⁸ X_{it} is a matrix of bill-level controls, such as bill and landholder types; X_t is a matrix of time-varying political variables. $ConflictRevenue_t$, $ConflictMonarch_t$, and $IndirectRevenue_t$ are as defined above. I expect π_1 , π_2 , and $\pi_3 < 0$.

It is possible that bill success and failure is a function of other factors. Examples include changes in England's fiscal capacity, sessions meeting during war years, or the majority political party in the House of Commons. I include X_t to control for any time-varying observable factors that could also be correlated with conflict and bill success or failure. They

²⁸Under James II, parliament did not meet from 1686 to 1688.

are summarized in Panel B of Table 1.2. Details on sources can be found in Appendix Section A.1.4. X_t includes $ConflictHouses_t$, an indicator for sessions where there is recorded conflict between the two Houses. It also includes a year trend to control for any trend in bill success over time; $WarSession_t$, an indicator for sessions meeting during war years; $DeficitRatio_t$, the deficit ratio as a measure of England's fiscal capacity; and $MajorityParty_t$, a categorical variable for majority party in the House of Commons during a parliament.

 X_{it} is a matrix of bill-level characteristics that help control for the effects of omitted variable bias at the bill-level, for example family type, bill quality, or lobbying efforts associated with different legal types of bills. Panel C of Table 1.2 reports difference in means across bill failure and success for a variety of bill characteristics. There does not appear to be any obvious differences in success and failure for most characteristics. X_{it} also includes an indicator for bills that repeated in any session. Details on coding are discussed further below and in Appendix Section A.1.1.

Table 1.3 reports the results from estimating equation (1). Columns (1)-(5) report the average marginal effects (AME) from a probit model and column (6) reports estimates from OLS. For the probit specifications, columns (1)-(3) successively introduce the political conflict variables. Column (4) introduces political controls X_t . Column (5) introduces bill-level characteristics X_{it} . Column (6) reports estimates from the same specification as column (5) but uses OLS and clusters errors at the session of parliament level. I cluster at this level because there is likely correlation across bills introduced into specific sessions of parliament.

Across all specifications, estate bills were more likely to fail in sessions that had fiscal conflict from 1660 to 1685. Estate bills were about 28 to 29 percentage points more likely to fail in these sessions. While the coefficient for ConflictMonarch is negative in some specifications, neither this type of conflict nor IndirectRevenue is statistically associated with estate bill success or failure. I discuss these results further in the next section.

1.3.3 Mechanism: Sudden Closures of Sessions of Parliament

How did political conflict cause bills to fail? One hypothesis is that political conflict operated through a specific mechanism: political tensions and conflict led to the "sudden and unexpected end of a session" that killed bills, such as estate bills, which otherwise would have passed (Hoppit 1996: 113). In the section, I provide evidence that conflict operated through this mechanism.

Because the monarch decided when sessions would begin and end, parliament faced a problem when passing estate bills because it did not have a preset or fixed amount of time to work.²⁹ Landholders, their lawyers and agents worked with MPs and peers to decide if and when to introduce estate bills as well as when to work on estate bills to pass a multi-layered process.

This process is summarized in Figure 1.5. The process required attention and approval by both Houses of Parliament and had to receive the royal assent by the monarch before becoming an Act of Parliament. Estate bills could enter in either the House of Commons or the House of Lords during this era. The method of approval was identical in both Houses. The legislative process formally has 12-steps. After a first and second public reading in the first house, a bill was sent to committee, where the committee would hear all concerned parties and make amendments (stages 1-3). It was then reported on from committee and amendments could be made. After a third public reading, the bill was approved by the first house (stages 4-5) and was sent to the second house for a similar process (stages 6-10). Any amendments made in the second house would be approved by the first house (stage 11). After the legislature's approval, a bill received the royal assent from the monarch and became an Act (stage 12). The monarch could also withhold the royal assent and veto an estate bill, which was only done 4 times during this era.

²⁹This is also noted by Kemp: "the Commons' basic procedural problem [...] was that their sittings could be interrupted by prorogation [...] which was a matter for the King" (Kemp 1971: 4). Different from Kemp (1971), however, I find that the Commons did have rights and chance to influence through their power of the purse. I am grateful to Julian Hoppit for this reference.

Figure 1.6 illustrates that sudden closures caused bills to fail. Panel A plots the legislative life-cycle of estate bills in a normal session and Panel B plots the same in a session that was suddenly closed. The figure plots the stage of the legislative life-cycle (1-10) as a function of the ordered days in the session.³⁰ Stage 1 is when a bill was introduced; Stage 5 is when the bill was sent to the second house. Stages 2 and 7 are when the bill was sent to committee in either of the two Houses. Stage 10 is when the bill received the royal assent. An estate bill's progress in a session of parliament over time is represented as a line (its legislative path). The slope shows how quickly parliament passed a bill. Acts of Parliament, successful bills, reached stage 10 and are full lines. The failed bills have shorter paths and are marked by bold lines.

The session in Panel A met for about 6 months and estate bills moved relatively quickly through parliament. On average, bills took 1.6 months to pass all 10 stages. Sets of estate bills were given the royal assent on the same day, which only occurred on 5 times during the session (the five "points" at stage 10). On each of those days, William III also signed at least one supply bill or an important public measure.³¹ The evidence supports that parliament endogenously passed estate bills with supply or public bills.

Parliament rejected the failed bills during this session (bold lines), possibly because a bill did not meet legal standards.³² Table A.3 summarizes information on the failed bills: a reference name, its house of origin, the stage and date of failure, reason for failure if recorded by the *Journals*, and if the bill became an Act in a later session. About 85% of the failed bills were rejected or have evidence of political or legal influence, e.g. a petition or counsel was heard. Only one bill was rejected, re-introduced, and passed to become an Act in the next session, which began 7 months later. The bill took 13 months to pass.

 $^{^{30}}$ Figure 1.5 shows that the legislative process formally had twelve stages. The *Journals* often recorded 2 stages on the same day.

³¹The one day he did not sign a supply bill, January 11, 1697, William signed a bill for the prosecution of individuals after the Assassination Plot of 1696 was discovered.

³²There is currently no work discussing why MPs would reject estate bills in general. Historiographies often discuss the politics and failure of specific estate bills. For example, see Seaward (1988).

The patterns suggest that lawyers, MPs', and peers' decisions to introduce and pass estate bills were endogenous to when they passed supply bills or public measures, and possibly expect the session to end. consistent with the strategy of "redress before supply" described above. Estate bills were never given the royal assent by themselves: they were always approved with supply or public bills. About 80% of sessions ended the same day a monarch approved a supply bill.³³

Debates and conflict about fiscal issues or royal policies discussed above (that were exogenous to estate bills) could make the monarch more likely to directly interfere with parliamentary proceedings by suddenly proroguing the session. The monarchs' speeches in parliament are illustrative of the decision to suddenly end a session of parliament. Charles II, for example, admonished the House of Commons when he suddenly prorogued the sixteenth session of parliament. He explained his reasoning to the House of Lords:

I have received an Address of such a Nature from the House of Commons, as I cannot but resent very highly, from the ill Consequences I have lived to see from such Addresses. *I intend therefore to prorogue* them for some short Time, in Hopes they will consider better what they ought to do at their Return. I have chosen to tell this to you first, because I would have you know I am very well satisfied with the dutiful Behaviour of this House; and you will by that Time be more enabled to give Me your Advice.³⁴

Panel B of Figure 1.6 shows the legislative life-cycle for estate bills in a session of parliament that was suddenly prorogued under Charles II. The bills' path appear to be "cut-off" when the session ended. It is also puzzling that two bills (marked by x's) were introduced only 3 days before the session ended, when there was presumably not enough time to pass the entire legislative process. Table A.2 presents information on failed bills during this session. In contrast to the "normally prorogued session", it shows that a majority of estate bills were

³³Table A.6 provides summary information on when the monarchs approved estate, public, and supply bills.

 $^{^{34}\}rm{Emphasis}$ added. 'House of Lords Journal Volume 13: 13 May 1678', in Journal of the House of Lords: Volume 13, 1675-1681 (London, 1767-1830): 219-220 [accessed February 2016].

still active when the session was prorogued. It also shows that failed bills never returned and did not become Acts of Parliament. Bills that were reintroduced were successful, but it took about a year and a half for to become an Act.

I first use speeches by the monarchs at the end of every session (found in the Journals of the House of Commons and Journals of the House of Lords) to code sessions that were suddenly prorogued. I supplement this information with information on each session detailed in historiographies, specifically in Ogg (1962), Horwitz (1977), and Smith (1999). The description of "prorogation events" is stark. For a session meeting under Charles II, for example, one prorogation is described as "suddenly interrupting" the proceedings (Ogg 1962: 590). For a session meeting during the Exclusion Crisis, the Black Rod's "ominous tap at the door" signaled the monarch's decision (Ogg 1962: 606). Under William and Mary, "the actual prorogation [of the second session] came as a surprise" (Horwitz 1977: 43).

The result from this coding is shown in Figure 1.2. There is a clear correlation between sessions that were suddenly prorogued and estate bill failure. There is a higher concentration of sessions that were suddenly prorogued prior to and immediately after the Glorious Revolution in 1688, capturing the period of growing political instability after 1665 under Charles II through the first few sessions of William and Mary's new reign. Sudden prorogations no longer occurred after 1690.

I estimate also estimate equation 1.1 but replace the conflict variables with an indicator for sessions that were suddenly closed. I use a probit model and OLS (standard errors clustered at session of parliament level). Table 1.4 reports estimates of the effect of sudden closures of parliament on estate bill success.

The results show that the monarch's decision to suddenly prorogue a session of parliament had a significant effect on parliament's passage of estate bills. Estate bills were about 43 percentage points more likely to fail if a session was suddenly prorogued from 1660 to 1689

(column (1)). Sudden prorogations continued to occur until 1690. Column (2) estimates the effect for this period and shows that the coefficient is nearly halved. Column (3) and (4) provide estimates of the effect for the entire period (1660 to 1702) using probit and OLS. The estimates decrease relative to the results from for the period before the Glorious Revolution (columns (1) and (2)) and offer a lower bound of the effect of sudden prorogations on parliament's passage of estate bills. The sensitivity of the estimates to the sample is a result of when sudden prorogations occurred (Figure 1.2) and that the system for passing estate bills changed after the Glorious Revolution (discussed further below). Both bias the estimates of sudden closures downward.

As a second exercise, I use information from the *Journals* on reason for bill failure as an outcome variable. This is motivated by the pattern that less bills were rejected by parliament in the session that was suddenly (Table A.2). We would expect bills failing in sessions that were suddenly prorogued to have significantly less rejections. I coded three different outcomes: (1) bills that were rejected, (2) bills rejected or failed in committee, and (3) bills that were rejected or had a petition or counsel heard in its last stage. I use probit and OLS models to test this hypothesis. Table A.7 in the Appendix. The statistical evidence is less robust, but the coefficients are negative and supports the hypothesis that bills were less likely to be outright rejected, and therefore still active, if a session was suddenly prorogued.

Table A.8 shows the economic implications of the sudden closure of parliament on three dimensions: scarring, delay, and displacement of new bills. As shown in Panel C of Table 1.1 and discussed above, bill can be thought of as projects, where a project is defined as a bill entering in more than one session and where the bill type and landholder's name matched. A project could have one of four outcomes: (1) fail after one attempt, (2) fail after multiple attempts, (3) succeed after one attempt, and (4) succeed after multiple attempts.

Table A.8 in the Appendix reports results of the economic implications of sudden closures of parliament. First, a sudden prorogation had scarring effects (Panel A). Projects first

entering in a session that was suddenly prorogued were significantly less likely to succeed and ever become an act of parliament by about 15 percent. If a bill was successful, it was still delayed by about 7 months (Panel B). Panel C provides evidence to suggest that new bills were displaced in sessions after a sudden prorogation. Estimates from negative binomial and poisson regressions of counts of new bills on a lag of sessions that were suddenly prorogued show that there were fewer new bills in a session meeting after a sudden prorogation. OLS estimates of shares in sessions of parliament also show this effect. In total, the evidence in Table A.8 shows that main economic impact of sudden prorogation was that most bills failed and were not successful again.

1.4 Removing Political Barriers: Glorious Revolution Mitigates Effect of Political Conflict

In 1688, the Glorious Revolution forced James II into exile and replaced him with William and Mary, daughter of the deposed James II. In this section, I show that political and institutional changes with the Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of fundamental political conflicts between the monarch and parliament (Ogg 1962; Horwitz 1977; Roberts 1993; Hoppit 1996; Smith 1999; Pincus 2009; Cox 2012).

Political conflict continued to occur after 1688. Under William and Mary, in 1689, there was disagreement in parliament over the settlement of the ordinary revenue, slowing down the process and making amendments that "were not to William's taste" (Horwitz 1977: 58). Parliament had failed to act on most of the king's recommendations regarding trade and poor relief during sessions under William III (Horwitz 1977: 256).

Table 1.5 provides evidence on how the Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of this conflict. First, conflict delaying a revenue bill, *ConflictRevenue* is strongly associated with

sessions that were suddenly prorogued. After the Glorious Revolution, the monarch suddenly closed sessions because of of debates surrounding the settlement of the new monarchs' ordinary revenue. The question of settlement raised more "fundamental questions about the future relationship between the crown and parliament" among the law-making MPs (Horwitz 1977: 27). It was an open issue for the first several sessions of William and Mary's reign: that William and Mary did not have "settled revenues over the first two years of their reign alter[ed] their bargaining relationship" with parliament (Cox 2012: 573). As argued by Cox (2012), parliament also engineered supply bills differently after the Glorious Revolution. Parliament began using time limits on tax revenue bills that parliament could terminate, increasing the monarchs' present value of revenues sanctioned by parliament (Cox 2012: Table 1). They also legislated bills such that government debt was funded on parliament's terms (Cox 2012: 578-579, Table 2). The new constitutional changes regarding the ordinary revenues and new types of supply bills appears to have resolved conflict sufficiently that it no longer led to sudden prorogations after 1690.

Indirect Revenue is not associated with sessions suddenly closed once the Glorious Revolution dummy is included. This result complements the evidence on Conflict Revenue. The historical literature suggests that this is because the settlement of the ordinary revenue in 1690 "shortened the financial leash of the monarch" (Cox 2012: 573). In 1660 parliament settled tax revenue from customs and excise on Charles II and his heirs for life. James II also received this ordinary revenue in 1685. Parliament, however, did not settle the ordinary revenue on William and Mary until 1690 because it could not agree on the terms. When it did pass the legislation, parliament made significant constitutional changes to the terms, only settling the excise for life and the customs for a term of 4 years. Revenues from excise for was granted for their lives; the customs, however, was limited to four years (Horwitz 1977: 53).

The results also show that ConflictMonarch loses some of its impact on the monarch's

decision to suddenly close sessions after the Glorious Revolution indicator is included. The evidence shows that conflict with monarch was more frequent under the late Stuarts when parliament was in session, and could lead the monarch to interfere with parliamentary proceedings. The findings support arguments by Roberts (1999), Pincus (2009), and Pincus and Robinson (2014) that the Glorious Revolution changed the nature of a fundamental type of conflict and tension in England's government. Under Charles II, conflict with the monarch's policies were largely driven by religious policy and altering succession of the monarchy (Ogg 1962: 351, 370, 379, 386, 587, 589-590, 606, 619). Groups in parliament, for example, worked on legislation to influence and alter the succession of the monarchy. The Exclusion Crisis (1679-1681) saw a growing opposition in parliament initiate legislation that would exclude James from becoming monarch because of his conversion to Catholicism. After the Glorious Revolution, conflicts with the monarchy centered on different types of legislative and policy issues.³⁵ In 1699, for example, parliament "had failed to act on most of the king [William III]'s recommendations" by not passing legislation to pay off debts incurred by war, to provide relief of the poor, and to advance trade.³⁶ Crucially, while conflicts with the monarch and regarding supply did occur after 1688, they did not necessarily lead to sudden prorogations.

Last, there is evidence that the Glorious Revolution had an impact on making sudden prorogations less likely in addition to the constitutional and political changes that affected the specific conflict variables (column (5)). This could embody new political norms in England's government that may not have been found in formal constitutional changes.³⁷ Perhaps there was an additional effect of the Glorious Revolution through who was elected to parliament or larger societal changes (Stasavage 2007; Pincus 2009; Pincus and Robinson 2014). This

³⁵There were threats to the new monarch's reign, which came from Jacobites, supporters of the deposed monarch James II. See Wells and Willis (2000).

³⁶See his speech in 'House of Lords Journal Volume 16: 4 May 1699', in *Journal of the House of Lords*: Volume 16, 1696-1701 (London, 1767-1830): 463-468. British History Online [accessed May 2017].

³⁷See, for example, Murrell (2017) for recent evidence that there was little new constitutional changes with the Glorious Revolution.

is an important avenue for future work.

I now estimate the effect of the Glorious Revolution on estate bill success using probit and OLS of the form:

$$Act_{it} = \pi_0 + \pi_1 ConflictRevenue_t + \pi_2 ConflictMonarch_t + \pi_3 IndirectRevenue_t + \pi_4 post1688 + X'_t \delta_1 + X'_{it} \delta_2 + \nu_{it}$$

$$(1.2)$$

where the variables are as defined above. I test the hypothesis that the Glorious Revolution improved parliament's passage of estate bills independent of conflict ($\pi_4 > 0$). A second hypothesis is that the Glorious Revolution was important in mitigating the effects of political conflict. As such, I include interaction terms with a post-1688 indicator and the conflict variables. I expect the interactions to have a non-negative effect.

Including the full set of controls for the entire period of analysis (1660 to 1702) may be problematic because the political and bill-level variables could also be outcomes of the Glorious Revolution. For example, war may be correlated with bill success and political conflict, but because the Glorious Revolution brought in a new monarch and changed England's international alliances, then war is also an outcome of the regime change. I address this problem by estimating the effect of political conflict on the subsample of sessions meeting from 1660 to 1685 and from 1689 to 1702.

Table 1.6 reports results from estimating equation 1.2. Columns (1)-(4) report the average marginal effects from probit specifications and column (5) reports OLS estimates. Column (1) includes an indicator for sessions meeting after the Glorious Revolution (post1688) and columns (2)-(4) introduce political conflict, political controls, and bill characteristics successively. Column (5) reports estimates from the same specification as column (4) but uses OLS and clusters errors at the session of parliament level.

The results show that estate bills were more likely to succeed after the Glorious Revolution (columns (1) and (2)), but that it is no longer significant when political controls are included. The effect of fiscal conflict remains negative and significant. Estate bills were about 13 to 19 percentage points more likely to fail in sessions with political conflict for the entire period. The estimate of fiscal conflict falls when using the population of estate bills (compare to the results in Table 1.3). This is likely because the system evolved after 1688, when both sudden closures and political conflict became less common (discussed further below).

The Glorious Revolution improved parliament's passage of estate bills (columns (1)-(2)), but that the effect is correlated with other political variables, like war (column (3)). This is sensible because war and the other political variables, like days a session met and political party, are also an outcome of the Glorious Revolution. It introduced a bundle of changes that could improve estate bill success. For example, there was a standardization of parliamentary meetings and increasing administrative capacity of the state after the Glorious Revolution (Hoppit 1996; Hodgson 2016). It is possible that Enlightenment ideas or the growing influence of the Whig party could also influence estate bill success (Stasavage 2007; Mokyr and Nye 2007; Pincus 2009). If and how these specific mechanisms influenced parliament's passage of estate bills is deserving of further research. The evidence here is consistent with the general argument that the political changes made the monarchs credibly respect parliament's constitutional rights (Cox 2012).³⁸

Table 1.7 examines if the Glorious Revolution also had an effect on parliament's operation by mitigating political conflict. Columns (1) and (2) include the full set of controls. To address concerns that including X_t and X_{it} will bias the estimates because they are endogenous to the Glorious Revolution, columns (3) and (4) report probit and OLS estimates of political conflict for the sample of sessions meeting from 1660 to 1685 and columns (5) and (6) report

³⁸The argument is also a part of the larger theme that the government's credibility improved for an important set of economic transactions after 1688 (North and Weingast 1989; Coffman et al. 2013; Bogart 2011).

the same for sessions meeting from 1689 to 1702.

The Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of political conflict. Important for estate bills, it mitigated the effect of ConflictRevenue. When including the interaction term, the estimate of ConflictRevenue remains negative while the interaction is positive (columns (1) and (2)). The bottom two rows of Table 1.6 report the F-statistic for the hypothesis that the total effect of political conflict is zero after 1688. We cannot reject the null that the effect after 1688 is zero, supporting that the Glorious Revolution mitigated the effects of political conflict and removed political barriers to passing estate bills. Columns (3) and (4) replicate results in Table 1.3: bills entering in sessions with fiscal conflict were more likely to fail from 1660 to 1685. The estimate of ConflictRevenue does not have an effect after the Glorious Revolution (columns (5) and (6)).

Was the Glorious Revolution endogenous to the demand for estate bills? This would be a novel interpretation of why the Glorious Revolution occurred and the evidence suggests this did not happen. First, there is no explicit evidence in the *Journals* that estate bills were the subject of much discussion or debate outside in the Convention Parliament of 1689 but that the sudden interference in parliament by the monarch was an issue. Second, there was a large increase in the number of estate bills and acts in the three sessions meeting immediately after the Glorious Revolution in comparison to the three sessions meeting immediately before (column (1) Panel A of Table A.12). This is likely because the last three sessions parliament met before the Glorious Revolution saw heated conflict over general policy, e.g. the Exclusion Crisis, and only met for a short period. When extending the period to include similar length sessions (column (2)), the difference is no longer significant. The number of acts increases only after the conflict no longer leads to sudden closures of parliament (column (3)).

Second, parliament appears to have adjusted how it legislated on estate bills after the Glorious Revolution. The evidence suggests that petitioners, MPs, and peers adjusted the intensive margin of when they introduced and worked on bills. Because the period from

1660 to 1688 was a low probability of success regime, we can expect petitioners to introduce bills early in the session to improve the likelihood of bill success. After the Glorious Revolution, a new high probability of success regime, we can expect to see bills introduced later in a session. Figure 1.3 reports the average number of bills introduced during the first 50 days of a session by each monarch. We observe this evolution in bill introduction. By 1695, more bills on average were introduced after the first month of a session. By the end of the period, parliament had fully standardized and streamlined the procedures for passing estate bills through a series of standing orders. Thus, while mitigating conflict was important for reforming property rights through estate bill success, parliament's adjustment to the new equilibrium (improving its capacity by adjusting the intensive margin of how it worked) may have enabled it to take on new types of legislation, such as acts improving the England's transportation infrastructure. Bogart and Richardson (2011) show that statutory authority acts (e.g. acts creating turnpike trusts) become far more common after the Glorious Revolution.

As a final illustration of the impact of the Glorious Revolution on parliament's functioning, Figure 1.4 shows the counterfactual success rate of estate bills had the Glorious Revolution not occurred and a "Stuart-like" system continued until 1702. Specifically, it shows how well the model fits the data from 1660 to 1689 from estimating the effect of ConflictRev_t on estate bill success. From 1689 to 1702, it shows the forecasted (out of sample predicted success rate). The model predicts that the success rate of estate bills would have been lower had the Glorious Revolution not occurred. Economically, this implies that political barriers would have continued to make it difficult to use parliament as a forum to change and reorganize property rights in preindustrial England. Taken together, the Glorious Revolution improved the likelihood estate bills would succeed largely by mitigating the effects of fundamental political conflicts between the monarch and parliament over fiscal issues. It also made conflict between the monarch and parliament over important policy issues less common and made sudden closures of sessions of parliament less likely.

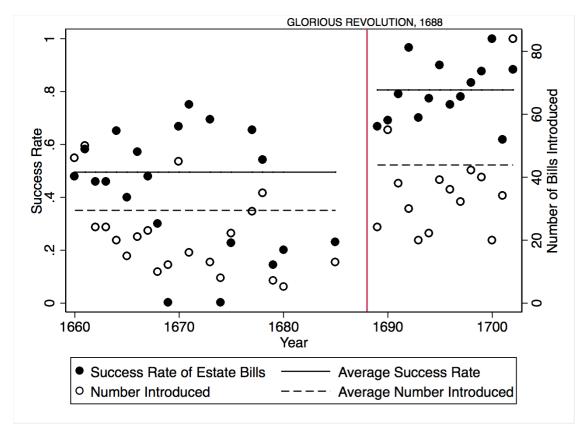
1.5 Conclusion

This paper shows that political conflict in government impeded English parliament's passage of estate bills, a legislation that reorganized property rights to land use, in the seventeenth century. I document that the Glorious Revolution of 1688 removed political barriers and improved the likelihood of estate bill success by mitigating the effects of this political conflict.

Rights that are not easily changed or transferred is a characteristic of property rights in many contexts. Unbundling these characteristics is important for programs or organizations that seek to alter property rights and allow groups to respond to new economic opportunities. States and governments with robust capacity to effectively alter rights and provide public goods have been shown to industrialize and modernize first (Epstein 2000; Dincecco 2011; Hodgson 2015). This is important for England's historical development given that infrequent and sporadic meetings of parliament were endemic across preindustrial Europe (van Zanden, et al. 2012). Further, many states today face political and fiscal conflict that hinder the development of this capacity. This paper provides new evidence and insight to how state capacity improved in England.

1.6 Figures and Tables

Figure 1.1: The Glorious Revolution Improved Reorganization of Property Rights to Land



Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Figure shows improvements in the success rate of estate bills (reorganization of property rights) and number of bills introduced after 1688. A "successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Success rate is calculated by years in which an estate bill was introduced. Average success rate is conditional on years parliament met and had estate bills introduced. "Number Introduced": total number of estate bills introduced in a year. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

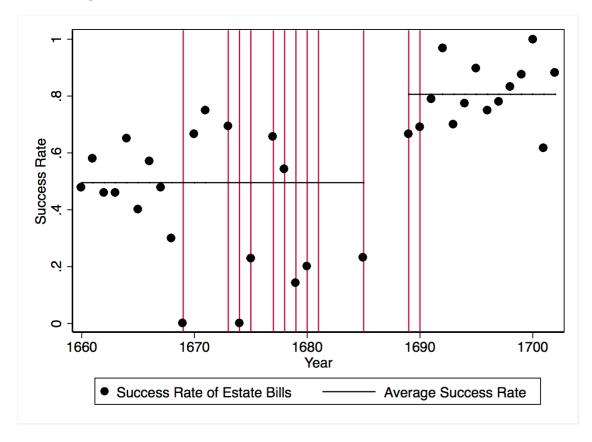
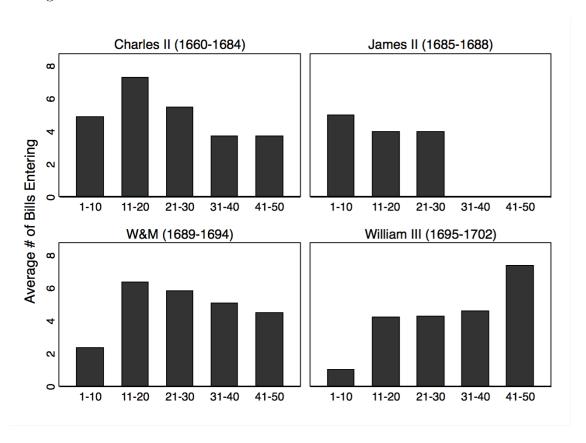


Figure 1.2: Sudden Closures of Sessions of Parliament, 1660-1702

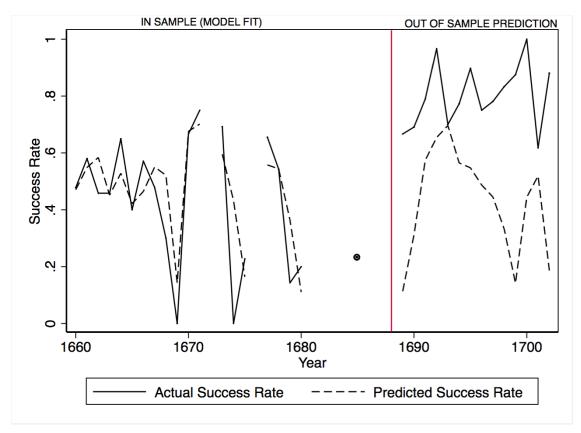
Notes: Figure shows years when monarch suddenly closed a session of parliament relative to success rate of estate bills. Sudden closures (prorogations): author's calculations from Journals, Ogg (1962), Horwitz (1977), and Smith (1999). Vertical lines mark years where a session was suddenly prorogued. Success rate: author's calculations from estate bill dataset. A "successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Success rate is calculated by years in which an estate bill was introduced. Average success rate is conditional on years parliament met and had estate bills introduced. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Figure 1.3: Evolution of Estate Bill Introduction after Glorious Revolution



Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset collected from *Journals*. Bills are introduced later in sessions after the Glorious Revolution (1688). Figure reports the average number of estate bills introduced in first 50 days of session by monarch in 10 day increments.

Figure 1.4: Parliament's Operation if Glorious Revolution Did Not Occur: Counterfactual Success Rate, 1689-1702



Notes: Glorious Revolution allowed parliament to effectively reorganize property rights to land. This figure shows the counterfactual success rate relative to the actual success rate of estate bills. A "successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Solid line shows changes in the actual success rate from 1660 to 1702. I construct the counterfactual success rate of estate bills in two steps. I first estimate equation (1) with fiscal conflict and political and bill-level controls on the subsample of estate bills entering parliament from 1660 to 1688. From 1660 to 1688, the dashed line shows the fitted success rate from this estimation. Second, I predict individual bill success using equation (1) for estate bills entering parliament from 1689 to 1702. I then take yearly averages to obtain the counterfactual success rate (dashed line) after 1688.

Table 1.1: Estate Bills: Success and Failure, 1660-1702

Panel A: Bills			
		Number	% of total
Successful bills (Acts of Parl	iament)	632	66.3
Failed	,	322	33.7
	Total	954	
Panel B: Failed Bills			
		Number	% of failed
Still active when session end	ed	176	54.6
Rejection		83	25.7
Petition or legal counsel		63	19.5
	Total	322	
Panel C: Projects			
Outcomes		Number	% of projects
Fail, one attempt		173	20.7
Fail, multiple attempts		28	3.3
Success, multiple attempts		66	7.9
Success, one attempt		567	67.9
	Total	834	

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Panel A: "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Panel B: Reason for bill failure as reocrded by *Journals of House of Lords* and *Journals of House of Commons*. Bills with no official recording were still active when session of parliament ended. Panel C: Projects are defined as bills that are introduced in multiple sessions. Bill have same name (first and last) and bill type. Most projects during this era are also bills.

Table 1.2: Conflict, Political, and Bill Variables

Panel A: Main Conflict Variables	# of sessions	avg. (wtd.)	st. dev. (wtd.)	(\min, \max)
Conflict revenue	9	0.23 (0.13)	0.43 (0.34)	(0,1)
Conflict monarch	8	$0.21\ (0.12)$	$0.36\ (0.32)$	(0,1)
Indirect Revenue $(£1,000,000s)$		$1.41\ (1.51)$	0.69(0.89)	(0.12, 2.8)
SP	15	0.44(0.17)	$0.49\ (0.38)$	(0,1)
Total number of sessions	38	, ,	, ,	
Sessions with estate bills	34			
Panel B: Political Controls	# of sessions	avg. (wtd.)	st. dev. (wtd.)	(min, max)
Conflict houses	10	0.29(0.89)	0.44(0.30)	(0,1)
War session	15	0.44 (0.35)	0.49(0.48)	(0,1)
Days (Length of Session)		116.24 (161.22)	76.87 (66.27)	(8, 294)
DeficitRatio		0.13(0.22)	0.31 (0.33)	(-0.27, 1.02)
Majority Party				
Opposition	3	0.08 (0.06)	0.28 (0.24)	
Court	15	0.44(0.38)	0.50 (0.48)	
Tory	8	0.23 (0.24)	0.43 (0.43)	
Whig	8	0.23(0.31)	0.43 (0.46)	
Panel C: Bill-Level Controls				
Property-holders	Failed	Success (Act)	difference	p-value
Nobility	0.24	0.20	-0.04	[0.15]
Gentry	0.59	0.60	0.01	[0.66]
No Rank	0.24	0.19	-0.05	[0.06]*
Clergy	0.02	0.05	0.02	[0.11]
Other	0.17	0.19	0.02	[0.50]
Bill Type (selected)				
Estate	0.82	0.88	0.06	[0.00]***
Sell	0.40	0.44	0.04	[0.19]
Other	0.42	0.44	0.02	[0.58]
Lease	0.04	0.06	0.02	[0.12]
Raise money	0.09	0.07	-0.02	[0.03]
Complete contract	0.09	0.10	0.01	[0.59]
Settlement	0.20	0.20	0.00	[0.91]
Purposes				
Debts	0.37	0.35	-0.03	[0.37]
Payment for widow	0.04	0.05	0.01	[0.32]
Payment for children	0.06	0.09	0.03	[0.08]*
Petition on bill	0.16	0.13	-0.04	[0.12]

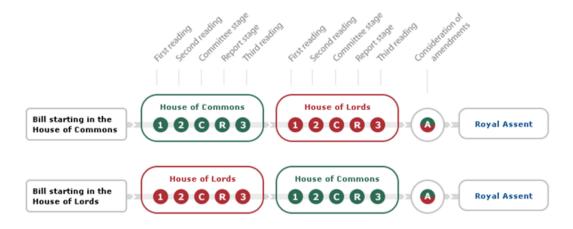
Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset and political dataset. Panels A and B: political variables measured at the session of parliament level. SP: sessions that were suddenly closed (prorogued). Panel C: bill-level characteristics coded from estate bill dataset. Characteristics are not mutually exclusive. "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). See Appendix Sections A.1.1 and A.1.4 for details on sources and coding. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p < 0.01, ** p < 0.05, * p < 0.1.

Table 1.3: The Effect of Political Conflict on Estate Bill Success, 1660-1685

	Outcome: Successful Bill (Act of Parl Probit					liament) OLS
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
ConflictRevenue	-0.36***		-0.37***	-0.30***	-0.29***	-0.28**
	(0.06)	0.0-	(0.06)	(0.11)	(0.10)	(0.11)
ConflictMonarch		0.07	0.01	-0.08	-0.08	-0.09
		(0.06)	(0.06)	(0.08)	(0.07)	(0.10)
IndirectRevenue			0.03	0.25	0.22	0.19
			(0.06)	(0.20)	(0.19)	(0.21)
observations	438	438	438	438	438	438
LR test	24.1	1.15	24.46	40.9	107.33	-
pseudo- R^2 or R^2	0.04	0.001	0.04	0.06	0.17	0.22
standard errors						cluster
politics	no	no	no	yes	yes	yes
type	no	no	no	no	yes	yes
landowner	no	no	no	no	yes	yes
origin	no	no	no	no	yes	yes

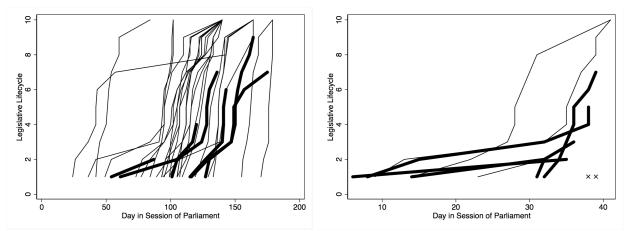
Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is bill success or failure. "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Sample: bills introduced in sessions meeting from 1660 to 1685. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME). ConflictRevenue: sessions with conflict between parliament and monarch over fiscal issues (tax bills). ConflictMonarch: sessions with conflict between monarch and parliament over general policy (legislation). IndirectRevenue: monarch's financial independence from parliament. Standard errors clustered at session-level (20 clusters).

Figure 1.5: Legislative Process



Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset and *Journals*. There were 10 stages in legislative process as recorded in *Journals*. Stage 1 is bill introduction. Stage 10 is approval (royal assent) by the monarch. Source:

Figure 1.6: Legislative Life-cycle in Normally and Suddenly Closed Sessions of Parliament



(a) Normally Closed Session: 20 October 1696- (b) Suddenly Closed Session: 13 October-22 16 April 1697 November 1675

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset and *Journals*. There were 10 stages in legislative process as recorded in *Journals*. Stage 1 is bill introduction. Stage 10 is approval (royal assent) by the monarch. Full lines denote successful bills (Acts of Parliament). Bold lines denote failed bills. Slope of line represents speed of passage.

Table 1.4: Effects of Sudden Prorogation on Estate Bill Success: Probit and OLS Results

	OLS	OLS	probit	OLS
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)
SP	-0.43***	-0.24***	-0.19***	-0.20***
	(0.13)	(0.09)	(0.05)	(0.05)
Observations	485	625	954	954
pseudo- R^2 (R^2)	0.28	0.29	0.23	0.27
LR test			279.21	-
standard errors	cluster	cluster	-	- cluster
sample	1660-1689	1660-1690	1660-1702	1660-1702
political vars	yes	yes	yes	yes
origin	yes	yes	yes	yes
type	29.71	32.55	56.83	30.98
	[0.00]	[0.00]	[0.00]	[0.00]
landholder	1.18	0.86	7.55	0.86
	[0.35]	[0.15]	[0.18]	[0.52]

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is bill success or failure. "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME). SP: sessions that were suddenly closed (prorogued) by the monarch.

Table 1.5: Conflict and Sudden Prorogation: OLS Estimates

	Outcome: Session is Suddenly Closed					
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	
ConflictRevenue	0.65*** (0.16)		0.62*** (0.15)	0.59*** (0.15)	0.55*** (0.14)	
ConflictMonarch		0.45** (0.19)	0.52*** (0.14)	0.48*** (0.15)	0.28* (0.15)	
Indirect Revenue		()	-47.40** (22.42)	-48.73** (22.90)	-31.23 (21.14)	
post1688			(22.12)	(22.50)	-1.22*** (0.41)	
Constant	0.24*** (0.08)	0.30*** (0.08)	-57.46** (27.32)	-53.49* (30.93)	(0.41) $-74.62**$ (28.33)	
Observations R^2	38 0.32	38 0.14	38 0.64	38 0.65	38 0.73	
political vars	no	no	no	yes	yes	

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is an indicator if a session was suddenly closed by the monarch. All estimates are OLS. post1688 is an indicator for sessions meeting after the Glorious Revolution. ConflictRevenue: sessions with conflict between parliament and monarch over fiscal issues (tax bills). ConflictMonarch: sessions with conflict between monarch and parliament over general policy (legislation). IndirectRevenue: amount of customs and excise capturing the monarch's financial independence from parliament.

Table 1.6: Glorious Revolution and Political Conflict, 1660-1702

	Outcome: Successful Bill (Act of Parliament)				
		Pro	bit		OLS
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
post1688	0.31***	0.28***	0.13	0.14	0.16
	(0.03)	(0.06)	(0.18)	(0.18)	(0.18)
ConflictRevenue		-0.19***	-0.14**	-0.15**	-0.15**
		(0.05)	(0.06)	(0.06)	(0.07)
ConflictMonarch		0.07*	0.06	0.05	0.06
		(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.07)
IndirectRevenue		0.04	0.26***	0.21**	0.23**
		(0.03)	(0.10)	(0.10)	(0.09)
observations	954	954	954	954	954
LR test	104.01	125.01	145.72	232.23	-
pseudo- R^2 or R^2	0.08	0.1	0.12	0.19	0.23
standard errors					cluster
politics	no	no	yes	yes	yes
type	no	no	no	yes	yes
landowner	no	no	no	yes	yes
origin	no	no	no	yes	yes

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is bill success or failure. "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Sample: bills introduced in sessions meeting from 1660 to 1702. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME). post1688 is an indicator for sessions meeting after the Glorious Revolution. ConflictRevenue: sessions with conflict between parliament and monarch over fiscal issues (tax bills). ConflictMonarch: sessions with conflict between monarch and parliament over general policy (legislation). IndirectRevenue: amount of customs and excise capturing the monarch's financial independence from parliament. Standard errors clustered at session-level.

Table 1.7: Glorious Revolution Mitigated Effects of Political Conflict

	Outco. 1660-1702		me: Successful bill (Ac 1660-1685			et of Parliament) 1689-1702	
	Probit	OLS	Probit	OLS	Probit	OLS	
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	
post1688	0.04	0.06					
ConflictRevenue	(0.18) $-0.18***$	(0.14) $-0.17**$	-0.29**	-0.28**	-0.07	-0.08	
	(0.06)	(0.08)	(0.10)	(0.11)	(0.09)	(0.08)	
ConflictMonarch	0.01	0.00	-0.08	-0.09	-0.18	-0.14	
	(0.06)	(0.09)	(0.07)	(0.10)	(0.21)	(0.15)	
IndirectRevenue	0.18	0.19	0.22	0.19	0.09***	0.09***	
	(0.11)	(0.12)	(0.18)	(0.21)	(0.24)	(0.31)	
post1688*ConflictRevenue	0.28*	0.30**					
	(0.12)	(0.13)					
post1688*ConflictMonarch	0.06	-0.02					
	(0.13)	(0.16)					
post1688*IndirectRevenue	0.02	0.04					
	(0.09)	(0.12)					
observations	954	954	438	438	516	516	
LR test	237.76	-	107.33	-	69.95	-	
pseudo- R^2 or R^2	0.19	0.23	0.17	0.22	0.13	0.14	
standard errors		cluster		cluster		cluster	
politics	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	
type	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	
landowner	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	
origin	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	yes	
ConflictRev + post1688Cor	nflictRev =	0					
F-test	0.35	0.07					
p-value	[0.55]	[0.79]					

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is bill success or failure. "Successful bill" was approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch (became an Act of Parliament). Sample: bills introduced in sessions meeting as indicated above columns. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME). post1688 is an indicator for sessions meeting after the Glorious Revolution. ConflictRevenue: sessions with conflict between parliament and monarch over fiscal issues (tax bills). ConflictMonarch: sessions with conflict between monarch and parliament over general policy (legislation). IndirectRevenue: proxies for monarch's financial independence from parliament from 1660 to 1685. Estimate shows change in probability of bill success for a £100,000 increase in indirect revenue. Standard errors clustered at session-level (column (2): 34, column (4): 20, and column (6): 14 clusters).

Chapter 2

Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts

Cyriat Weslyd cannot perform the said Sale unless he be enabled thereto by Act of Parliament¹

2.1 Introduction

From 1660 to 1702, England's parliament saw nearly a thousand appeals similar to that of Mr. Weslyd: a sale or transaction could not be carried out without an estate act of parliament. Estate acts largely addressed rights to land for individual families created by family settlements, which were a type of property conveyance and key legal piece of marriage and inheritance practices in England. You can browse through the *Journals* of the Houses of Parliament and you will likely find some time devoted to an estate bill on a given day. Despite their prominence in parliament's records and in the Parliamentary Archives, estate acts have been understudied relative to other types of parliamentary legislation regarding

¹Weslyd Estate Act, 10 &11 WIII, c. 70.

property rights, like enclosure acts.² The existing literature agrees that estate acts were central to the settlement and inheritance system from 1660 to 1882.³ No work, however, has studied acts during the "origins" of the estate act-settlement system from 1660 to 1702. It is possible that their form and function during this period was quite different than later estate acts, which have been studied to some degree by other scholars.

I collect and transcribe a random sample of 65 estate acts passed from 1660 to 1702 from the Parliamentary Archives to study their economic and legal functions. A series of standing orders were instituted at the end of William III's reign (1694-1702) that would regulate how parliament processed acts until the mid-nineteenth century.⁴ I code and classify the individual clauses of each act.⁵ My approach to classifying estate acts differs from previous work on the legislation that relies on information contained in acts' descriptive titles or draws on information outside of the acts.⁶

The first part of the paper documents that there are four main types of estate acts using cluster analysis on the hand-coding of clauses. Cluster analysis is a statistical method that shows how similar clauses are to one another based on how they co-occur in acts. I use the method as a text analysis tool.⁷ The results show the four types of acts stem

²See, for example, McCloskey (1972) and Tennyson (2013).

³Previous work studying estate acts are Bogart and Richardson (2009, 2010) for the period from 1660 to 1830 and McCahill (2013) for the period from 1740 to 1800. Private estate acts were no longer needed with the passage of the Settled Land Acts of the 1880s.

⁴Standing orders were instituted by the House of Lords to reform the legislative process for private legislation. The reforms appear to begin in 1698 with a standing order that amended the committee requirements for processing a bill. See *Remembrances*. Previous work on private acts during this period has focused on standing orders. See, for example, William (1948).

⁵The approach is similar to Cox (2012) who codes provisions of supply acts passed by parliament during this era. Priest (2015) examines the economic functions of entails by studying private acts in Virginia's legislature. The method is also similar to work coding different legal forms for businesses. For example, Guinnane et al. (2018) code the types of articles of association for companies in late nineteenth and early twentieth century Britain.

⁶Bogart and Richardson (2009, 2010) use descriptive titles to code acts' economic and legal functions. McCahill (2013), the closest to my study, classifies bills and examines the rationales for the legislation using information from a variety of sources: petitions, judges' reports, and the text of the acts. He does not discuss the underlying conveyance, legal constraints or the way parliament addressed landholders' appeals for an act. Hoppit (1996, 1997, 2011) documents the aggregate evolution of private or personal acts of parliament and failed legislation.

⁷Cluster analysis is generally useful to make "a typology or classification system where one does not

from a landholder's underlying type of property conveyance: land held in settlements, strict settlements, by religious corporations, or regulated by other property conveyances (e.g. wills, decrees of Chancery, and common recoveries). While landholders had different underlying conveyances, all four types of acts addressed legal to carrying out economic transactions: from selling land to pay debts to making leases to shopkeepers in London. Estate acts contain a set of enactment clauses that provide a legal framework to authorize and support economic transactions. Each type of act has a different set of enactment clauses, suggesting parliament had different policies to address landholders' conveyances and appeals.

The second part of this paper examines if and how the types of acts evolved over time. Previous work shows there was a significant increase in the number of estate acts passed by parliament and introduced after the Glorious Revolution of 1688 (Hoppit 1996). The increase in volume is connected to the mitigation of conflict in government and the onset of standardized meetings of parliament (Dimitruk, forthcoming; Hoppit 1996). I document that there was also a change in the composition of acts during this period. Coincident with their legal sanctioning and subsequent adoption by landholders during the 1690s (Bonfield 1983), landholders increasingly used estate acts to address strict settlements, which allowed trusts to protect an entail and even more difficult to break a settlement (Bonfield 1983). The evidence suggests there was a policy change by parliament after the Glorious Revolution of 1688. For example, parliament began allowing landholders to make loans with purchase money from land sales after 1688. There was also a significant change in who used estate acts. Relatively fewer members of the nobility, upper gentry, and Members of Parliament (MPs) petitioned for acts and relatively more lower-ranked landholders (professionals, esquires, and gentlemen) petitioned for estate acts after the Glorious Revolution. Both the evident policy changes and greater access to parliament are likely connected to a new political economic equilibrium ushered in with the Glorious Revolution, which also altered England's state

already exist" (Gore 2000). Recent work uses computational text analysis to examine states' borrowing and migration of the United States Civil Code during the mid-nineteenth century (Funk and Mullen 2018). See also Klerman (forthcoming) for an overview of recent quantitative methods in legal history.

formation and public finance (Stasavage 2007; Pincus 2009; Cox 2016; Pincus and Robinson 2014; Hodgson 2017).

The last part of the paper studies the economic implications of estate acts. I first match 30% of acts to secondary sources of topographical histories (mostly the Victoria County Histories) to show that transactions actually took place because a family received an act. Transactions largely took place in London and Middlesex, an important part of England's growing economy during the seventeenth century. I also estimate a minimum return to an act for a family. The estimated returns to a transaction were generally large. They ranged from a minimum 1 to at least 50% return for a project. The highest returns were for properties in London and for members of the lower gentry (esquires and gentlemen).

The findings contribute to the economic history of estate acts and settlements. Previous work on the legislation highlights that acts were an "essential counterpart to settlements" but arrives at different conclusions about the functions of acts. The evidence in this paper supports the argument that acts addressed high transaction costs of land use created by settlements.⁸ The findings also show that acts facilitated debt payments, but this appears to be connected to how English law protected land from seizure by creditors (Priest 2006) as opposed to largely facilitating over-consumption (McCahill 2013). The types of property holders, the geography of acts, and the scale of settled land involved is at odds with the historical literature on settlements. It is generally agreed that entails and strict settlements were primarily used by the nobility and upper gentry to restrict alienation and keep landed estates together as a source of socioeconomic and political power (Habakkuk 1979, 1994; Priest 2006).⁹ That many acts were for Middlesex and members of the lower gentry is consistent with recent work showing a variety of landholders in London had settled property at the time of the Great Fire of London in 1666 (Doolittle 2015). It is possible that a broader cross section of landholders used settlements and entails for other economic reasons. Priest

⁸Bogart and Richardson (2009, 2010, 2011).

⁹See also Erickson (1993) and Chapter 6 in Bonfield (1983) for an overview.

(2015), for example, argues entails were used to protect against financial risk in the American colonies.

The evidence also connects England's growing economy to institutional change facilitated by parliament.¹⁰ Since North and Weingast (1989), it has been the subject of much debate if there is any connection between property rights or parliamentary policies during this period. The current consensus is that there was not (Ogilvie and Carus 2014: 23). This paper provides new evidence consistent with Bogart and Richardson (2011) that parliament and estate acts aimed to reorganize property rights, create security in transacting, and allow a range of landholders to access England's commercializing and urbanizing economy during the seventeenth century.¹¹ The evidence is important because this time period in England is often used as the historical example to illustrate how property rights influence development and how institutions change more generally.¹² It shows how parliament commodified land at a time it became more difficult to market because of the creation of the strict settlement. The study thus provides insight to England's transition from feudalism to capitalism (Hodgson 2015; 2017).

¹⁰Recent work shows that there was a series of dramatic changes in economic activity in seventeenth-century England. See Wallis et al. (2018) for structural change, Kelly and Ó Gráda (2016) for innovation in production, and Broadberry and Wallis (2017) for a tempering of aggregate fluctuations in economic activity.

¹¹On the importance of reorganizing property rights in development, see for example Rosenthal (1990), Epstein (2000), and Lamoreaux (2011). That property rights to land were important also helps understand why parliament, as a body of landholders, appears to have enacted policies in acts that were "good." See Ogilvie and Carus (2014).

¹²See Besley and Ghatak (2010) for an example of work citing this period for property rights and development; see Murrell (2017) and Cox (2012) for institutional change more generally and the difference between evolutionary vs. structural breaks in institutions.

2.2 Background: Settlements and Estate Acts of Parliament

2.2.1 Purposes and Forms of Settlements

Most estate acts addressed property rights for land held in property conveyances called settlements. I show below that few also addressed land held by religious corporations and land regulated by other types of conveyances, like wills or decrees of chancery. A settlement had origins in the medieval era practice of making financial arrangements for a family at marriage (Bonfield 1983: 1). Families used settlements for two reasons. First, they provided for a wife upon widowhood (creating a jointure) and, by the end of the seventeenth century, evolved to contain provisions for other family members. Second, settlements ensured the transmission of property across generations. The types of settlements available to landholders to carry out these goals evolved over the course of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries with transitions in English land law (Bonfield 1983: Chapters 2 and 4).

There were two main types of settlements available to landholders by the end of the seventeenth century: (1) the "life estate-entail mode" and (2) the strict settlement (Bonfield 1983: Chapters 2 and 4). They both were generally created at marriage or by will and made the current, living landholders life tenants with specific rights or powers to manage settled land and provide for family members. Examples of powers include those to charge estates, e.g. for jointure or provision for children (their portions or maintenances). Powers that facilitated estate management include making leases, selling, or mortgaging land (English and Saville 1983: 17-20). Powers were given to specific persons. If a life tenant died, for example, the power could not be exercised. If the parties did not write a specific power in the settlement,

¹³See Bond (1964) and Section 2.3 below.

¹⁴There was a transition of discretionary to mandatory provisions of younger sons and daughters in marriage settlement (Bonfield 1983: 110-115).

such as the power to sell land, settled land could not be sold.

The two types of settlements differed in how they ensured the transmission of property across generations. Both types of settlements created an *estate tail* or entail which specified a particular line of succession for the estate. The custom or norm was primogeniture - to grant an entail to the line of the eldest son or male children (*heirs male of the body*). The difference between a life estate-entail settlement and a strict settlement lay in how they protected the entail, which was a specific type of *contingent remainder*.

A life estate-entail settlement created an entail that was secured in the eldest son who, depending on the time of making the settlement, was unborn. The entail was contingent because it depended on the event of the eldest son actually being born. Until the heir was born and the entail had vested, it was precarious because the life tenant could destroy it through a variety of legal actions and would no longer be subject to the terms of the settlement (Bonfield 1983: 32 and 47). A strict, or restrictive, settlement created a trust that had powers with the life tenant. The trust was charged with "preserving the contingent remainders" to ensure the estate descended as specified in an entail. It is this type of settlement that has received the most attention by economic historians and historians of English landed society because it was in use for about two hundred years.¹⁵

The strict settlement was an innovation in conveyancing sometime in the mid to late seventeenth century. Strict settlements were available to landholders as a legal form throughout the later seventeenth century. It was a legally dubious device until 1697, however, because the two court systems - equity and common law - did not align in their treatment of trustees. Chancery may have been protecting trusts before 1675, ¹⁶ but the common law courts offi-

¹⁵ See Habakkuk (1994) and Bonfield (1983): Chapter 6 for a useful overview of the literature. Settlements could create trusts for a variety of purposes related to provision for the family. A trust was employed to raise stipends for wives (jointures) or younger children (portions). They could also be used for married women's separate estates (Bonfield 1983: 70, 110-115; Erickson 1993).

¹⁶Cases in 1683 and 1693 show that Chancery was protecting trusts as well as debating other matters regarding the duty of the trustees. These are *Davies v. Weld* in 1683 and *Platt v. Spugg* in 1693 (Bonfield 1983: 77-78).

cially sanctioned trustees to preserve contingent remainders in 1697 with the case Duncomb $v.\ Duncomb$ (Bonfield 1983: 71).¹⁷

2.2.2 Amending and Breaking Settlements

Settlements and strict settlements developed within the context of how English equitable and common law regarded land use. Since Henry VIII, there was conflict in the courts over how conveyances promoted or prevented the alienability of property. Throughout the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, common law was generally against restraints on alienation and allowed for barring entails to break settlements through different legal actions. Landholders and conveyancers sought methods of protecting land and property to keep it in tact as a source of economic and political power. As noted above, an entail was one method to keep land in tact across generations but it was precarious because it could be destroyed by a life tenant through a variety of legal actions. One process available was a common recovery. Strict settlements could only be broken by common recovery. By "suffering a recovery," a family would join with the heir when they turned 21 and enter into a fictitious law suit to break a settlement. The family could then alter their estate, sell land, and write a new settlement (English and Saville 1983: 14, 23).

The only other method for breaking or amending a (strict) settlement was by an (estate) act of parliament (English and Saville 1983: 14, 23). Estate acts were versatile. Acts could completely void a settlement, give life tenants or trustees new powers, or amend the charges on an estate. From 1660 to 1702, parliament worked on 954 estate bills. A majority of the bills (67%) were approved by the House of Commons, Lords, and monarch to become acts of parliament (Dimitruk, forthcoming).

There is a debate on the legal and economic functions of estate acts. Some work argues that

 $^{^{17}}$ Legally, the case allowed estates to become vested in trustees, in turn securing the viability of the strict settlement.

settlements created high transaction costs of land use, which in turn prevented land from being sold, invested in, or transformed for productive purposes (Bogart and Richardson 2009). Contemporary jurists also argued that entails prevented landholders from raising capital by making long-term leases and that entails "could discourage purchasers because one could not be certain of the seller's right to convey" (cited in Bonfield 1983: 16). A different view argues that landholders appealed to parliament to pay debts that were largely incurred for social rather than economic reasons. Acts therefore facilitated "indulgent expenditure" and profligacy of landholders (McCahill 2013). A related perspective is that estate acts provided a mechanism for property holders "to raise large sums of money for a sudden need" (Bond 1964: 326).

2.3 Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts

In this section, I show that there are four main types of estate acts from 1660 to 1702. The types are found using hierarchical cluster analysis on a hand-coding of each act's individual clauses.

2.3.1 Coding Estate Acts

I transcribe a random sample of 65 estate acts collected from the Parliamentary Archives.¹⁸ I code several pieces of information: the economic and legal functions of the acts, the types of landholders who used estate acts, the location and property value of the settled land. In this section, I focus on the economic and legal functions. Sections 2.4 and 2.5 discuss who used estate acts and location of the settled property.

 $^{^{18}\}mathrm{A}$ full list of the acts with reference number, title, year and session of passage is found in Appendix Section B.1.

A simple time-line, shown in Figure 2.1, helps understand the structure of estate acts and my coding of their economic and legal functions. A family chooses to settle their land at time t, usually at marriage or at death. The family then goes about life. They enter into other economic transactions with unsettled property and settled property (as allowed by the powers of a settlement). For example, a family can mortgage unsettled land, make loans, and manage their property and rental incomes. Families also make other decisions, for example, when and how many children (potential heirs) to have. At some later date t' the family encounters an event or condition that changes their life or economic situation. Examples of events include a child's marriage or the death of a life tenant. A family could also encounter an opportunity to pay their debts, sell land, or make an investment in their property. They assess the details of their settlement and find, however, that they are constrained from carrying out a transaction. For example, if the entail has become vested in the heir and does not contain a specific power to convey land, then the family would not be able to sell their settled land if there was a willing purchaser.

To carry out the transaction, the family has two choices. If a family has a life estate-entail settlement and the entail has vested (heir has been born), then they can wait to break the settlement when the heir turns 21. If a family has a strict settlement, they can wait to break the settlement when the heir (who may be born or unborn) turns 21. In either case, a family can also decide to bring a proposal to parliament for an estate act. We observe the families who decide to come to parliament. They - or their representative (a lawyer or Member of Parliament) - appeal for an act by describing their economic situation and legal constraint. The family also gives a brief proposal of a project or reorganization they would like to complete. They often explain that the project is for the benefit of the entire family. Specifically, 40% percent of acts cite either that the proposed project will be "too the benefitt and advantage" of the current landholders, their issue, and family or that the family, naming the life tenant, wife, children, would be greatly "damnified and ruined" without an act. The bill goes through the parliamentary process and, if a solution is found and approved, becomes

an act of parliament. 19 The estate act is then observed at time t''.

Estate acts have a common format. They begin with a *preamble section* which is followed by an *enactment section*. An example of the beginning of a preamble section is shown in Appendix Figure B.1. An example of the beginning of an enactment section is shown in Appendix Figure B.2. Each section has a set of clauses. Preamble clauses begin with "Whereas" and enactment clauses begin with "Be it therefore Enacted." Each clause was entered into a separate column in a spreadsheet. I then read each clause and coded its content:

- (1) the type of settlement or property conveyance made at time t ((I) in Figure 2.1),
- (2) the types of appeals (economic and legal) a petitioner made to parliament ((II)-(IV) in Figure 2.1), and
- (3) the types of enactment clauses found in an act ((V) in Figure 2.1).

Table 2.1 reports a full list of the types clauses with summary statistics (number, share of acts that contain the clause, standard deviation).

2.3.2 Types of Acts: Cluster Analysis

I use cluster analysis to study how the clauses in each act fit together to produce types of acts. The approach provides a new way to classify types of estate acts using their entire content and not only in terms of the types of economic transactions estate acts allowed.²⁰ The method uncovers new patterns and is useful as a robustness check on the coding of individual clauses. For example, we can expect a cluster to have an appeal citing the costs of debts are high with a proposal to pay or reorganize their debts. Cluster analysis produces a tree called a dendrogram that shows how similar or dissimilar clauses are to one another based on how clauses co-occur in acts. The results mirror settlements themselves:

¹⁹See Dimitruk (forthcoming) for an overview of parliament's process of passing estate acts during this period.

 $^{^{20}}$ It builds on Bogart and Richardson (2010) who code legal functions using descriptive titles.

"[s]ettlements were like leaves on a tree: all different, yet nevertheless recognisably leaves of the same tree. A settlement could be made to do anything: 'there is no event, or combination of events, which can possibly happen in a family, or whatever rank or number, but what may be provided for and met, by a family settlement' [...] Almost any difficulty arising in the management of a settled estate could be remedied by private [estate] act" (English and Saville 1983: 18 and 50).

Cluster analysis is an agglomerative method that begins with the coding of the individual clauses and agglomerates clusters of similar clauses.²¹ Each act has a set of binary indicators if it includes the clauses recorded in Table 2.1. I therefore have an act by clause matrix (65 rows and 33 columns). There are three steps to identify clusters of clauses. First, the act by clause matrix is transposed into a clause by act matrix to examine how clauses co-occur in acts. I then transform the matrix into a distance matrix. The distance matrix tells us how similar (or dissimilar) pairs of clauses are based on if they are found together in acts. Last, I use different hierarchical clustering algorithms in R (specifically the hclust() function) to examine how clauses go together or are found together in acts.

Figure 2.2 illustrates clusters of clauses using two different algorithms for examining the similarity of clauses. The algorithms have different criteria for linking clusters. Panel A uses a single linkage method; Panel B uses a complete linkage method. The single or minimum linkage method finds loose clusters by computing pairwise dissimilarities between elements in one cluster compared to another and then considers the *minimum* of the dissimilarities as a linkage criterion. It is a "friends of friends" strategy. The complete linkage method first computes pairwise dissimilarities between the elements in one cluster and elements in a second cluster and then considers the *maximum* value of the dissimilarities to be the linkage criterion. The resulting clusters are compact relative to the single linkage method.

²¹The method has similarities to factor analysis which is common social sciences to create composite indices or scores. Factor analysis creates groups from the covariability across the individual items or variables. Cluster analysis creates groups from scores across the set of variables (Gore 2000).

The results show that there are four main types of acts. The types stem from the main property conveyance or settlement a family made, which is a mutually exclusive category: (1) life estate entail settlements, (2) strict settlements, (3) other types of property conveyances (e.g. wills or decrees of chancery), and (4) land held by religious corporations. The four types of property conveyances are associated with different types of appeals and enactment clauses. Because of the nature of appeals and enactment clauses, they are not mutually exclusive categories. An act has a binary indicator if it contains a specific type of clause or not.

Type 1: Life Estate Entail Settlement Acts

The first type of act addresses life estate-entail settlements (labeled (I) in Panel A and Panel B in Figure 2.2). Most acts (about 60%) addressed this type of settlement (Panel A-1, Table 2.1). Families with life estate-entail settlements sought estate acts for a variety of economic purposes: from selling land to pay debts and portions for their children (cluster (I-a)) to making leases (cluster (I-b)).

Families most often cited that there was an incomplete transaction, such a land sale or debt contract (51% of acts, Panel A-2, Table 2.1). Landholders also frequently sought to reorganize their estate to pay their debts (40% of acts, Panel A-4, Table 2.1) because the costs of debt servicing were high. This is most clearly seen in cluster (I-b) in Panel B of Figure 2.2. About 50% of acts' descriptive titles describe that the acts allowed landholders to sell land to pay debts (Bogart and Richardson (2010): Figure 5). McCahill (2013) also documents that about 50% of landholders in his sample appealed to parliament to pay debts. Because of the prominence of debt payments, I discuss how acts addressed debt and credit transactions in more detail in Section 2.3.3. Landholders with settlements also sought to make leases or build when there was an investment opportunity (cluster (I-a), Panel B, Figure 2.2). Previous work also documents lease acts were primarily motivated by investment opportunities (McCahill 2013) and that lease acts are found in Middlesex and

London, possibly related to London's expansion (Bogart and Richardson 2009, 2010).

There were two types of constraints associated with life estate-entail settlements that prevented landholders from carrying out economic transactions: (1) the heir was under 21 (constraint.minority) and therefore the entail had vested and (2) the life tenant was generally barred from carrying out the transaction, possibly because the settlement did not have a specific power (constraint.life.tenant.barred). These two constraints are the most commonly cited legal constraints (Panel A-3, Table 2.1).

Parliament addressed life estate-entail settlements and landholders' appeals with a common set of economic clauses. All acts provided a specific "economic clause" that authorized the transaction to take place: either by empowering the landholder or vesting the property in a set of trustees who had the authority to carry out the transactions. These clauses are directly related to the titles of an act, allowing land to be sold, mortgaged, or leased (Panel B, Table 2.1). The coding and clusters also show that acts have "legal enactment clauses" that appear to have supported the transaction in other ways. Forty percent of acts contain a clause or phrase that specified the transaction would be considered "good at law" by protecting the transaction from potential claimants (Panel B-2, Table 2.1). This clause is most often included in acts that allowed land to be sold or leased (clusters (I-a) and (I-b), Figure 2.1).

At least a quarter of acts also have clauses that specifically amended the family settlement by discharging estates on the land, amending family charges (for example jointures), or explicitly protecting a charge from being altered (Panel B-2, Table 2.1). These "settlement amendment clauses" are found in life estate-entail acts using the single linkage criteria (cluster (I-a) in Panel A). It may have been necessary to compensate family members or potential losers to carry out the proposed transaction.²² About 30% of appeals explain that the family members or other interested parties agree or consent to the proposed transaction and reorganization.

²²See Hoppit (2011) for compensation and parliamentary principles during this era.

Type 2: Strict Settlement Acts

A life estate-entail settlement was the standard conveyance for landholding families during this era while strict settlements were relatively new. Fewer acts addressed strict settlements than life estate-entail settlements for the entire period (20% compared to 58%, Panel A-1, Table 2.1). I discuss changes over time in Section 2.4. Clusters (II-a) and (II-b) in Panel A and cluster (IV) in Panel B show that a different set of appeals and clauses are clustered with strict settlements. There is a better defined cluster with more clauses when using the complete linkage algorithm (Panel B).

Acts with strict settlements commonly cite that costs of managing land were high and sought to reorganize estates by purchasing new land. McCahill (2013) finds a similar type of appeal citing high management costs and the desire to make estates more coherent (pp. 158-159). Families with strict settlements face two main types of legal constraints: (1) claims could be made after any transaction by family members and (2) the trustees were without a specific power to carry out a transaction and if they did so would be in breach of trust (cluster (IV), Panel B).

Several clauses are found in the life estate-entail settlement (cluster (I-a), Panel A) are also found in the strict settlement (cluster (IV), Panel B). The overlap shows that appeals and enactment clauses were found in both types of acts. Landholders with either types of conveyance sought to sell, lease, and mortgage their property.

Acts for strict settlements were different in that parliament appears to have created policies that enabled landholders to make their estates more coherent. Specifically, acts addressing strict settlements contain provisions that authorized landholders to make loans with purchase money after selling land (cluster (II-b), Panel A; cluster (IV), Panel B). Acts in McCahill's study allowed landholders to invest in more liquid assets, like government bonds, but did not allow landholders to make loans. Enactment clauses also addressed the liability of the trustees who would carry out the transaction (cluster (II-a), Panel A; cluster (IV), Panel

B). Strict settlement acts also amended and protected existing charges for family members (cluster (IV), Panel B).

Types 3 and 4: Acts for Other Conveyances and Religious Corporations

Seventeen percent of acts addressed other types of land conveyances (for example wills, decrees of chancery, common recoveries, and previous acts of parliament). The acts appear to have less structure than settlement acts because its cluster is sensitive to the type of algorithm used. It is loosely connected to appeals to make settlements when a family member is upon marriage (cluster (III), Panel A). Panel B shows it is most closely connected with the appeal landholders had an unforeseen circumstance or accidental event that led to the need for an act. This type of appeal was the most colorful. For example, appeals cite that a life tenant or executor of a will had fled the country or could not be found. One family's life tenant suddenly died before officially signing his will. Another landholder received bad counsel or legal advice and therefore entered into a conveyance that had unintended consequences. The finding highlights that acts could be used to address not only settlements but a a variety of types of contracts and circumstances.

The last type of act addressed land held by religious corporations (cluster (IV), Panel A; cluster (III), Panel B). There are only two in the sample of 65 and both were for land held by the Bishopric of London. The acts not only hint at the importance of London and Middlesex property markets but also provide evidence that parliament reorganized rights for land held in other types of restrictive conveyances that could not be changed as economic opportunities changed. The descriptions in these acts describe a growing and changing property market. In 1662, the Bishop of London sought to make leases of land in the heart of London, near St. Paul's cathedral.²³ In 1692, the Bishop also sought to exchange lands with tenements and cottages that had become intermixed and with his neighbor the Earl of Monmouth. The same act sought to enclose a parcel of common land which was "boggy" and had become "a

²³Bishop of London Estate Act, 14 CII, c. 40.

very great Annoyance and unhealthy to the inhabitants" who lived nearby.²⁴

2.3.3 Credit and Debt in Estate Acts

Motivated by the fact that 40% of acts appealed to reorganize estates and pay debts, this subsection examines credit and debt transactions in acts. I first examine if and how acts aimed to facilitate debt payments by removing legal constraints to pay debts. Second, I discuss how acts gave landholders direct access to more liquid assets (e.g. money).

Landholders appealed to refinance their estates by paying their debts or by taking a lower interest rate. English law protected land and estates from involuntary seizure by creditors for payment of secured and unsecured debts (Priest 2006: 401-408). Landholders still had incentive to pay their debts to maintain access to further credit for resources to manage their property and provide for family members. English law in general "gave landholders the privilege to choose [when] to sell land, and land was sold only on terms to which they consented" (Priest 2006: 408). Landholders in my sample could have secured or unsecured debts. The families could only have secured debts - "credit that was extended on the basis of specific pledges of land as collateral, formalized by signatures and the debtors' seals" - on freehold land - and not settled land (Priest 2006: 401-408).

The acts only describe landholders settled property, but it seems likely that landholders using estate acts had mortgaged freehold property. Mortgage contracts allowed land to remain mortgaged for years or decades. Mortgage contracts were private, individual contracts that specify a date for repayment (usually one year from the date of the mortgage).²⁵ Lenders

²⁴Monmouth Estate Act, 4&5 W&M, c. 38.

²⁵There were three main types: (1) mortgages by demise, (2) by conveyance, (3) by assignment. A personal bond could also be used to secure the repayment of a sum of money. A bond for debt was often drawn up in connection with a mortgage and were used to strengthen the covenants for repayment in the mortgage deed. Other bonds for debt might refer to the payment of an annuity, or simply a sum of money lent privately between two people. See https://www.nottingham.ac.uk/manuscriptsandspecialcollections/researchguidance/deedsindepth/mort-

were "happy with the interest being paid once or twice a year" because a mortgage was viewed as an investment in which interest payments brought in a steady income.²⁶ A creditor or lender would only begin to take actions in the common law courts and Court of Chancery to recover debts if the debtor or borrower failed to pay the annual interest on the mortgage contract (Priest 2006: 404-407). Secured debts could also be inherited with land across generations because lenders could bind future heirs to the contract. If heirs were bound to the contract, then a creditor could pursue a cause of action against the heir after the debtor's death. In this case an heir might be compelled to discharge the debt out of the real property he inherited (Priest 2006: 404).

Table 2.2 summarizes information on credit-debt transactions found in estate acts. The most common transaction (found in 26/65=40% of all acts) was debt payment by allowing landholders to sell, lease, or mortgage land (Panel A). About half of appeals to pay debts (13/26) cite that the "costs of debt maintenance" were high. This could be because the rents were not sufficient to cover interest rate payments (6/26=23% of acts citing debt payment), the debts were "great" or "considerable," or that the landholder was facing an action of ejectment by a creditor (2/26=8% of all acts citing debt payment). One appeal is explicit that the landholders would like to refinance for a lower interest rate because the "Interest at the rate of six pounds per cent yearely is payable for the most of the principall money thereby secured [and can therefore gain no benefit of the land]."²⁷ An interest rate of 6 percent is the same as the mortgage interest rate series compiled by Allen (1988) from 1651 to 1703 (Table 1). The cost of debts may have been large for specific families, but the value of the debts they wanted to discharge were not obviously greater than other types of appeals to pay debts (Panel A of Table 2.2).²⁸

gaged/mortgaged.aspx

 $^{^{26}}$ See https://www.nottingham.ac.uk/manuscriptsandspecialcollections/researchguidance/deedsindepth/mortgaged/mortgaged.aspx

²⁷Cornbury Estate Act, 2&3 W&M, c. 15.

²⁸The value of debts recorded in acts are not as large as those found in McCahill (2013). Using information outside of estate bills, McCahill (2013) finds that families on 53 estate bills had levels of debts between £4,000 and over £75,000: 5 estate bills had debts under £4,000. See Table 5.

About a quarter of appeals (6/26) cite that the family has an incomplete debt contract. The family has tried or would like to pay the debt, but are facing some legal constraint and are therefore unable to do so. For example, an Act in 1690 appealed that landholders Henry and Philip Hildeyard had mortgaged property (by conveyance) to John Howland, who was their heir at law, for the sum of £1,751. John Howland, however, had since died and his daughter and heir, Elizabeth, was under 21. She was therefore unable to effectively re-convey the property back to the Hildeyards after they had made the payment due on the mortgage.²⁹ An additional quarter of acts (7/26) cite that the family is facing high costs of debt and has an incomplete transaction. For example, the Earl of Cleveland received an Act in 1666 amending a previous of act of parliament. The Act of 1666 extended his time to pay debts (enlarging the equity of redemption), therefore helping to complete a debt payment. With the previous act, he had already raised "summes of money bonafide paid and disbursed for purchase of interest improvements" but that there were still a "multiplicity of interests" in the mortgaged premises that required more time for payment.³⁰

The types of debts recorded in appeals suggest that debt payment was a problem because the law allowed debts to "roll over" with the estate after the death of a life tenant, similar to that of the Hildeyard's case discussed above. More than half of appeals (58%) cite that they would like to pay the life tenant's debts but are ambiguous as to why the debts were incurred (Panel B, Table 2.2). Two-thirds of these acts (10/15) are clear that the life tenant is deceased and that the debts have carried over with the estate. In 1695, Samuel Powell explained that a will did not make adequate provision for debt repayment: "by reason of the deficiency of the provision which his father had made for payment thereof [...] your supplyant Samuel is unable to pay otherwise than by mortgage or sale of a reasonable part of the said estate" Thomas Hopwood explained in 1698 that there was a lack of information about the inherited debts: "the said Thomas Hopwood being under age at the time of the said Articles

²⁹Hildeyard Estate Act, 2&3 W&M, c. 29.

³⁰Cleveland Estate Act, 18&19 CII, c. 6.

³¹Powell Estate Act, 7&8 WIII, c. 10.

and Marriage did not know that the said Debts were so many and great and did not take care to make provision upon the said Marriage for payment thereof." ³²

A specific type of debt is described in 42% of proposals to pay debts. The types of debts are evenly distributed across three categories which not obviously suggestive of profligacy as found by McCahill (2013). There was a lingering effect of the Civil Wars: 15% percent of debts were incurred because landholders needed to pay fines or buy back land after it was confiscated during the Civil Wars. Fifteen percent cite that debts were incurred to pay for family charges (e.g. marriage portions or children's maintenances). About 11% cite that debts were incurred for of productive purposes (e.g. to work coal mines or to build).

In addition to facilitating debt payments, estate acts also facilitated landholders' ability to access more liquid assets by empowering them to mortgage land and by allowing them to make loans. The evidence suggests parliament was breaking constraints landholders faced and transforming resources to be more liquid at a time when England's economy was commercializing. The transformations are key components of economic development because they can give landholders access to "resources such as tools, livestock, and building materials in agricultural societies or money in more advanced markets" (Priest 2006: 393; Hodgson 2015). Parliament would eventually require that funds be invested in government bonds or navy and exchequer bills with a standing order of 1762 (McCahill 2013: 158; Bogart and Richardson 2009).

2.4 Glorious Revolution and Rise of Strict Settlements

There was large and significant increase in the number of estate acts passed by parliament after the Glorious Revolution of 1688. The increase has largely been attributed to the mitigation of conflict and onset of standardized meetings of parliament (Dimitruk, forthcoming;

³²Hopwood Estate Act, 11&12 WIII, c. 29.

Hoppit 1996). It is possible that the composition of acts also changed because of political and legal developments of the era. In this section, I examine if and which types of conveyances, appeals, and enactment clauses (and therefore types of acts) became more or less common after 1688. I also examine if and how different landholders accessed parliament after the Glorious Revolution. I comment on the related literature in light of the findings.

The composition of estate acts could have evolved because the period saw both legal and political changes. First, there were important developments in general property rights institutions. As discussed in Section 2.2, the strict settlement was a legal innovation in conveyancing during this period that made it more difficult to sell or use land in new ways. Strict settlements were increasingly adopted by landholders during the later seventeenth century. Both common law and chancery courts aligned in 1697 to sanction strict settlements (Bonfield 1983). The share of acts citing strict settlements as the primary type of conveyance increases by 16% after 1688 but it is not statistically significant (Panel A, Table 2.3).³³ Figure B.5 plots the evolution in the number of acts citing a settlement, strict settlement, religious corporation, or other type of conveyance. There appears to be a slow evolution over the course of the period with an increasing number of strict settlements and fewer "other" types of conveyances after 1688. Parallel to their legal validation in the court system and subsequent adoption (Bonfield 1983: Chapter 3, Table 3), 60% of acts (8/13) naming strict settlements are found at the end of the period from 1695 to 1702.

The analysis in Section 2.3.2 shows that settlements and strict settlements led to different types of acts because they are clustered with a different set of economic appeals, legal constraints, and enactment clauses. We may therefore expect to see an evolution in the appeals landholders made to parliament. Strict settlements are clustered with appeals related to management costs, legal issues with trusts, and proposals to purchase new property. Relatively more acts cite high management costs after 1688, but, similar to that of strict

 $^{^{33}}$ There is no statistical change before and after 1697, when the common law courts approved of strict settlements.

settlements, it is not a statistically significant change. Legal constraints related to trusts are only found in appeals after 1688 and there is a significant increase in the share of acts proposing to purchase new property after 1688.³⁴

Panel B of Table 2.3 reports differences in types of enactment clauses or policies parliament used to address appeals. The cluster analysis shows that parliament allowed loans to be made if a family had a strict settlement, was facing high management costs, and proposed to purchase new property. Mortgage clauses are also found in a similar part of the trees as the strict settlement cluster (cluster (IV), Panel B). Acts allowing mortgages and loans appear only after 1688. There was also a change in the types of legal clauses found in acts. There was a significant increase in the share of acts (by 0.23) with the legal clause that the transaction would be "good at law." Clauses specifically addressing a trust (for example, limiting the liability of individual trustees) are only found after the Glorious Revolution. Last, there is a significant increase in the share of acts with clauses to protect existing charges (by 0.16). Clauses to protect existing charges are found in the strict settlement cluster when using the complete linkage algorithm (cluster (IV), Panel B, Figure 2.2).

There was thus not a sharp or structural break in the types of conveyances found in estate acts, nor was there a sharp change in the types of economic appeals landholders made. Parliament rather saw a slowly increasing share of families with strict settlements over the period. We see some (as opposed to no) strict settlements in parliament even though fewer landholders used them from 1660 to 1690s. Parliament was thus familiar with the device and designing acts to address them. The types of policies that allowed landholders to carry out their proposed projects, however, appears to have significantly changed after the Glorious Revolution.

Parliament appears to have adopted novel policies that allowed families who had strict settlements to convert their resources to more liquid assets through mortgages and loans.

³⁴The pattern is consistent with Figure 5 in Bogart and Richardson (2010) who use acts' descriptive titles.

Parliament also adopted legal clauses that would support these economic activities by ensuring the transactions would be good at law and clarifying duties of trustees who would carry out the transactions. Last, the evidence suggests that strict settlements created a need for parliament to protect existing charges in order to allow landholders to break their settlements.³⁵ It is likely that the new policies are linked to the political changes of the era. I discuss further below.

We may also expect to see a different composition of landholders who used estate acts after the Glorious Revolution. I first code the characteristics of petitioners for acts.³⁶ Panel A of Table B.3 in the Appendix reports the social classes of petitioners: if the petition has a noble person, a titled gentry (baronets and knights), an untitled gentry (esquires and gentlemen), a member of the clergy (bishop or archbishop), or a professional (alderman, merchant, or some trade like ironmonger, goldsmith, or creditor). I also code if the petitioner is a Member of Parliament (MP) or is related to an MP, the petitioner is female, or the petitioners are a couple.³⁷ The distribution of the types of petitioners is consistent with the underlying distribution of landholders in England, which was a majority gentry (Thompson 1966). A similar distribution, with the exception of the proportion of professionals, is also found by previous studies (Bogart and Richardson 2010; McCahill 2013). I find fewer professionals who petitioned for acts over the course of the entire period, but I document there was a significant change over time.

Second, I code characteristics of trustees in the enactment clauses. Acts could use the legal

³⁵There is a possible connection to the rulings of the common law and chancery courts. According to Bonfield (1983), the decision of the common law courts in *Duncomb v. Duncomb* also altered the "attitude of Chancery" towards protecting trusts. The ruling possibly changed the nature of the cases brought forward in Chancery. Before 1697, the Chancellor faced requests to break settlements. Thereafter, cases arose because the contingent remaindermen who were deprived for the interest and requested relief (pg. 78).

³⁶Acts have a petition clause that names the specific landholders requesting the act. I code the information for any petitioners listed in this clause. The petition clause is usually found at the beginning of the preamble or enactment sections. Acts can have more than one petitioner so the characteristics are not mutually exclusive. See Section B.1 for details.

³⁷A full discussion of the interests and role of women in the political, legal, and economic process of obtaining an act is currently outside the scope of this paper but is important for future work.

device of a trust to carry out the economic transaction.³⁸ For example, an Act passed in 1666 sanctioned that "the purchase money which is to bee paid [...] shall be laid out and disposed by the right Honourable George Duke of Albermarle John Gould Esquire Mary Monck mother of the said Elizabeth Pride and Thomas Stringer Esquire for the purchasing lands."³⁹ Panel B of Table B.3 in the Appendix reports the distribution of trustees across social classes. It is similar to that of petitioners with the exception of professionals, who are more likely to be trustees. There are two characteristics of trustees that are not found in petitions: trustees "of London" and trustees "of an Inn of Court" (trained in law). The trustees from London appear to be agents of families with property outside of London because only 33% (4/12) acts naming a trustee from London were for property in London and Middlesex. The variety of petitioners and trustees highlights that a range of landholders used acts and were involved in the management of property during the seventeenth century.

Table 2.4 shows that overall distribution of types of petitioners and trustees emerges after the Glorious Revolution. There is a significant decline in the share of acts naming petitioners that have more political and economic resources (either a noble person, a member of the upper gentry, or an MP). The share of acts naming a member of the lower gentry or a professional significantly increases after 1688 (by 22%). The two groups are not mutually exclusive, but are significantly negatively correlated. A similar evolution is found for trustees. First, acts increasingly vested property in trusts (by 40%) to allow land to be sold, mortgaged, or leased (Panel B of Table 2.4). The share of acts naming a lower gentry as a trustee significantly increased after 1688. Acts naming professionals, lawyers (of an inn of court), and people from London as trustees are only found after the Glorious Revolution.

The evidence suggests the political changes of the era influenced who was able to access parliament. While private acts had been provided to landholders from the 1600s, the late seventeenth century was the first time parliament sat continuously since the Civil Wars and

³⁸See Section 2.2 on trusts.

³⁹Pride Estate Act, 18&19 CII, c. 25.

Commonwealth era. It is not surprising this may have been less open of a system - with more politically and economically powerful people using estate acts - after the Restoration of 1660. Relatedly, the seventeenth century saw the dominance of courtiers in parliament from 1661 to (about) 1677 (Harris 1993). The MPs using acts before the Glorious Revolution appear to be politically connected or active. From 1660 to 1685, about 72% (7/11) of the MPs were at one time court supporters or were royalists during the Civil Wars. An Act was passed in 1664 to make a settlement for Robert Carr who was a prominent MP prior to the Glorious Revolution. He was politically connected - at times associated with the court party and a gentleman of the Privy Chamber from 1671 to 1678. From 1670 to 1679, when the Court was losing influence relative to an Opposition, 2 of the 4 acts were for MPs who would go on to support excluding James, Duke of York, from becoming monarch. Sir William Courtenay, who received an Act in 1670, eventually hosted William of Orange on the eve of the Glorious Revolution.

The Glorious Revolution of 1688 is associated with ushering in a new political economic equilibrium. This new equilibrium is characterized by the dominance of the Whig party that was able to implement new policies regarding public finance, trade, religion, and state formation.⁴¹ It is possible this new equilibrium influenced who used estate acts and the new policies parliament adopted toward estate acts after 1688. Several of the MPs who used estate acts after 1688 also supported the Glorious Revolution. The Cornburys (Act received in 1690) were "among the first army officers to desert to William III in 1688." An Act in 1690 was for Elizabeth Montagu, daughter of MP John Pelham. Pelham "welcomed the Revolution, advancing loans and supplying ordnance to the new regime." Policies promot-

⁴⁰Two noble families (but not MPs) were known catholics and received acts in 1685 and 1689.

 $^{^{41}\}mathrm{Stasavage}$ (2007), Mokyr and Nye (2007), Pincus (2009), Cox (2012), Dudley (2013), Pincus and Robinson (2014) and Hodgson (2016).

 $^{^{42}\}mbox{HYDE},$ Hon. Edward, Visct. Cornbury (1661-1723): http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/hyde-edward-1661-i723 and http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1690-1715/member/hyde-edward-1661-1723.

⁴³PELHAM, Sir John, 3rd Bt. (c.1623-1703), of Halland, Laughton, Suss.: http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/pelham-sir-john-1623-1703.

ing the liquidity of land (in terms of allowing landholders to make loans and mortgages) are not generally associated with Tories (Pincus 2009).

Political and institutional changes with the Glorious Revolution also mitigated conflict and was important for parliament's functioning and meetings.⁴⁴ The changes increased both the probability of estate bill success and the time parliament had to legislate. Both of these factors could have allowed a broader cross-section of landholders to use estate acts by lowering the threshold of expected benefits to costs for petitioner. The rise of the lower gentry and the change in composition of trustees could also be tied to the adoption of strict settlement. It is possible that there was an interaction between the development of strict settlements in the London area, which was the center of the legal profession and training in England, and the development of estate acts.⁴⁵

In sum, this section shows that there were significant changes in the economic and legal functions of estate acts after the Glorious Revolution. The evidence suggests there was an evolution of acts characterized by a shift away from a closed system with fewer, politically connected families using parliament to a relatively more open system after 1688. Consistent with a new political economic equilibrium, the changes with the Glorious Revolution appears to have allowed more novel policies in estate acts - ones that allowed for the commodification of land and resources - at a time when it became more difficult to use land because of the legal sanctioning of strict settlements.

2.5 Economic Implications

The evidence thus far documents that landholders faced constraints to carrying out economic transactions because of their family settlements and other property conveyances. Work

⁴⁴See Dimitruk (forthcoming), Randall (1916), and Roberts (1993).

⁴⁵The origins of the settlement are still speculated. It is possible that the legal profession in London played an important role in the development of the device (Bonfield 1983: 66).

examines the effects of strict settlements on land markets (Allen 1988). We know less, however, about the effects of estate acts for families or property markets. As a starting point to investigate the economic effects of estate acts, I first provide evidence that land was sold, leased, or mortgaged because a family received an estate act in growing and changing property markets. Second, I estimate that the transactions or projects in acts had high returns to a family.

First, most acts addressed settled land in London and Middlesex which were growing urban areas throughout the seventeenth century (Figure 2.3).⁴⁶ This complements recent work showing parts of London were settled at the time of the Great Fire in 1666 (Doolittle 2015). It is also consistent with Bogart and Richardson (2009, 2010) who code geography of acts from 1660 to 1800 using descriptive titles.

Second, I match 30% (19/65) of acts to information in secondary sources recording land transactions. I use the Victoria County Histories and other topographical histories to match acts that allowed land to be sold, leased, or mortgaged.⁴⁷ Table 2.5 lists the matched sample of transactions that took place or likely took place because a family received an estate act.

The acts most likely to be matched are those found in London and Middlesex or those whose records are more likely to survive (such as larger landholders, MPs, government officials). The evidence shows that most transactions did not occur immediately after receiving an act (column (VII)). On average, transactions took place about seven years after the rights were conferred, with some transactions taking place as soon as one year later and as late as fourteen years later. It is possible that the time to use the rights declined over time. Transactions authorized by acts passed from 1660 to 1688 took place nine years later on average. Transactions authorized by acts passed from 1688 to 1702 took place six years later on average. Four acts (in rows 1, 4, 8, and 11) have secondary sources which cite

⁴⁶See Wallis et al. (2018) for recent work on structural change and urbanization in the seventeenth century.

⁴⁷I therefore do not attempt to match acts that confirmed a previous transaction or those to make a settlement. See Appendix Section B.1 for information on the matching process.

that multiple transactions occurred over time because of the rights conferred by the act. For example, Elizabeth Montagu and her family continued to use the act throughout the eighteenth century to make building leases in London.

Column (IX) reports who land was sold or leased to if it is recorded in the source. The parties are somewhat diverse. Two MPs sold land to a fellow MP (row 1 and row 4) and one MP was lessee of the property (row 10). Sir Edward Hungerford received the rights to make leases and to hold a market on his property in 1677. He demolished his house and began a market in the Strand (present day Charing Cross), but soon sold to another MP, Sir Stephen Fox who had an interest in commercial development, and one of the most famous architects of the era, Sir Christopher Wren, who designed St. Paul's Cathedral as it currently stands. Traders and merchants were involved: including bricklayers (as lessees - row 8), a cloth merchant and MP (lessee - row 10), and a mason (purchaser - row 11). Learned professionals and high government officials also bought property because of estate acts. A celebrated Dr. Busby purchased property from the Hammonds in 1670 (row 3). Later acts were sold to government officials: the attorney general (row 13), secretary to the treasury (row 15), clerk of the crown in chancery (row 17), and keeper of the great seal (row 18).

Estimated Returns

A last approach to estimate the economic effects of receiving an estate act is to estimate the returns to a family of receiving an act. I estimate a minimum rate of return R_i for an act i: $R_i \times B_i - C_i \ge 0$, where $R_i = \frac{1}{1+r_i}$ is the expected increase to annual rental income because the family was able to carry out a project, B_i is the annual rental income found in an act, and C_i is the cost of obtaining an act.

 $^{^{48}}$ Hungerford, who initially sought the lease, was known as a "spendthrift" and supported Exclusion and the Revolution. See HUNGERFORD, Edward (1632-1711), of Corsham, Wilts.; Broadwater, Suss. and Hungerford House, the Strand, Westminster: http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/hungerford-edward-1632-1711. Fox - of humble origins and a court dependent - was also a mortagee of Hungerford, advancing £3,000 to him. Fox enjoyed a "substantial interest in Westminster, more particularly as the property was well-situated for high-class commercial redevelopment." See FOX, Stephen (1627-1716), of Farley, Wilts. and Whitehall: http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/fox-stephen-1627-1716.

I code the annual rental value or current rack rental of the land (B_i) from the text of an act. It is most often found in the economic enactment clause. For example, a clause will cite "land to be sold for the sum of one thousand pounds to purchase new land." I convert all sums into an annual rental value for the land by dividing by a years purchase of 25. The distribution of property values is right skewed (Figure B.3).⁴⁹ The average value for a settled property is about £330 per annum, but most acts have rental values between the minimum of £12 and £330 per annum. Consistent with the literature, the evidence suggests acts addressed settled land that was only a fraction of a family's landed portfolio (English and Saville 1983: 53; Allen 1988: 41). The rental value of settled lands for five families represents between 1% and 30% of their annual income.⁵⁰

The total cost of going to parliament to invest in an act (C_i) during the seventeenth century is estimated to be £100-200. An itemized "Bill of Costs For Soliciting an Estate Bill" shows the total cost for an act passed sometime between 1794 and 1799 was 392 l. 14 s. 8 d. (Ellis 1799: 97-117). The bill of costs includes parliamentary fees from 1700. It also includes information on solicitors' fees for writing and preparing the petition and appeal for an act, fees for consultation (with interested parties, MPs, and judges), and fees for going to parliament throughout the parliamentary process. The cost of 392 l. 14 s. 8 d. for an act from 1799 is likely to be an overestimate of the total cost of obtaining an act from 1660 to 1702 for two reasons. First, it includes fees for bringing a petition to judges. Bills introduced to parliament from 1660 to 1702 did not have to go through this step. Excluding all potential "judges' fees" decreases the costs to 336 l. 19 s. 4 d. Second, the bill of costs was for an act for the Duke of Buckingham who may have paid a premium for a solicitor. Therefore a reasonable range of costs for an estate act from 1660 to 1702 is £100-200.

Figure 2.4 shows the distribution of minimum estimated returns across annual rental incomes

⁴⁹A smaller subsample of acts record the acreage of the settled land. Figure B.4 shows the distribution of acreage is also right skewed with most acts addressing property less than 500 acres. See Appendix Section B.1 for details on acreage.

⁵⁰The families are listed in Appendix Section B.1. They are for acts of five MPs.

of settled property under three different costs (£100, 150, and 200). Estimated returns are largest for the properties with low annual rental values. Acts for properties in London and Middlesex have significantly higher estimated returns than for land elsewhere. Acts for the lower gentry and professionals have significantly higher returns than for acts for the nobility and upper gentry.⁵¹ The two acts with largest returns were for properties in London and Middlesex. An Act passed in 1694 allowed the Earl of Thanet to make leases to Thomas Powell, an MP and cloth merchant who used the lease to turn the house into a market or exchange for lace men. The Act with the second highest return completed a will to sell land in London to pay debts of a deceased ironmonger and citizen of London, Charles Milson. It is not surprising the estimated return is so high because the property was in London and the appeal suggests the executor of the will, Edward Milson, would greatly benefit from the act. He was unable to finish paying the debts of his kinsman (valued at £12 per annum) and was therefore unable to receive any of the legacies of the will that were "reserved for the maintenance and support of [himself] and his family." ⁵²

2.6 Conclusion

This paper shows that families sought estate acts for economic purposes in the seventeenth century, like refinancing estates and accessing England's growing economy, but were constrained by their family settlements. There were four different types of estate acts characterized by different appeals and enactment clauses approved by parliament that stem from different types of settlements and property conveyances. The period saw an evolution in the composition of types of acts that is linked to creation and adoption of strict settlements and the political changes with the Glorious Revolution of 1688. Estate acts were significant economically because they authorized transactions in the London and Middlesex property

⁵¹Estimates from regression of returns on property in Middlesex and if the petitioner is a lower gentry or professional.

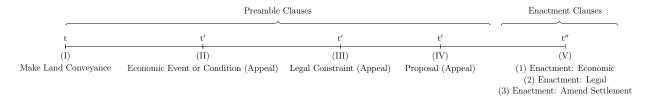
⁵²Milson Estate Act, 8&9 WIII, c. 24.

market and were for members of the lower gentry.

There are several areas for future work. First, parliament enacted a series of standing orders at the end of the period that changed the procedures for passing estate acts. It is possible that the orders are linked to the broader compositional changes in estate acts. Second, we need to better understand the political origins of parliament's provision of estate acts and how the political economy changed over time. Last, future work should further investigate the economic effects of estate acts. The acts may be useful to understand the geography of England's development, for example the link between urbanization and property rights change in general and Middlesex and London in particular.

2.7 Figures and Tables

Figure 2.1: Structure of an Estate Act



Notes: Figure shows a landed family's time line as it relates to needing an estate act of parliament (I)-(IV). It also shows information found in estate acts. Sections in curly brackets correspond to the structure of an act (preamble and enactment clauses) and the source of each clause. See text and Appendix Section B.1 for full description.

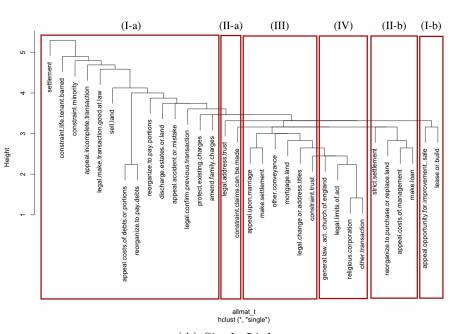
Table 2.1: Economic and Legal Functions of Estate Acts, 1660-1702

	n	share of acts	st. dev.	min	max
Panel A: Preamble Section					
1. Conveyances					
strict settlement	13	0.20	0.40	0	1
life estate entail settlement	38	0.58	0.50	0	1
religious corporation	2	0.03	0.17	0	1
other conveyance	11	0.17	0.38	0	1
(e.g. will, previous act of parliament)					
2. Appeal: economic condition					
cost of debts or portions	20	0.31	0.47	0	1
interest rates		0.09	0.29	0	1
management costs	8	0.12	0.33	0	1
accident, mistake	14	0.22	0.41	0	1
opportunity for transaction	13	0.20	0.40	0	1
incomplete transaction	33	0.51	0.50	0	1
marriage	7	0.11	0.31	0	1
3. Appeal: legal constraint					
general law	4	0.06	0.24	0	1
life tenant barred	30	0.46	0.50	0	1
heir is minority	26	0.40	0.49	0	1
trust is constrained	4	0.06	0.24	0	1
claims can be made	8	0.12	0.33	0	1
4. Proposed reorganization					
pay debts	26	0.40	0.49	0	1
pay portions	15	0.23	0.42	0	1
purchase land or replace	11	0.17	0.38	0	1
Panel B: Enactment Section					
1. Economic transactions clauses					
sale^*	34	0.52	0.50	0	1
lease*	14	0.20	0.40	0	1
make settlement*	8	0.12	0.33	0	1
mortgage*	8	0.12	0.33	0	1
other	4	0.06	0.24	0	1
loan	9	0.14	0.35	0	1
2. Legal clauses					
make good at law	25	0.38	0.49	0	1
protect from claims	19	0.29	0.46	0	1
address or change title	7	0.11	0.31	0	1
limits to act	7	0.11	0.31	0	1
confirm transaction*	17	0.26	0.44	0	1
amend trust	10	0.15	0.36	0	1
3. Amend settlement clauses					-
discharge or void estates	16	0.25	0.43	0	1
amend family charges	11	0.17	0.38	0	1
protect existing charges	10	0.15	0.36	0	1

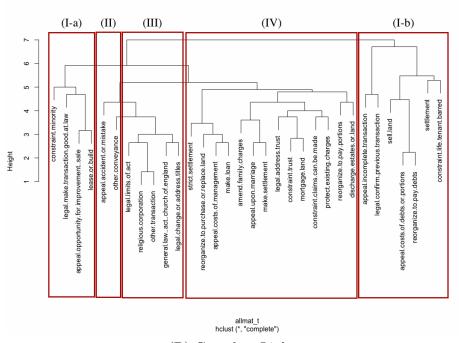
Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Classification of clauses in estate acts of parliament. Coded as an indicator if act contains specific clause or not. 1. Land conveyances - mutually exclusive. 2. Appeal: economic - not mutually exclusive. 3. Appeal: Legal Constraint - not mutually exclusive. 1. Enactment: Economic - not mutually exclusive. 2. Enactment: Legal - not mutually exclusive. 3. Enactment: Settlement amendment - not mutually exclusive. * - type corresponds to title of act. All acts have either an economic or a legal clause. See Appendix Section B.1 for details on coding and Appendix Tables B.1 and B.2 for examples of each type.

Figure 2.2: Clusters of Clauses in Acts



(A) Single Linkage



(B) Complete Linkage

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Figure shows dendrograms of clauses found in estate acts created using hierarchical cluster analysis. Panel A uses a single linkage algorithm; Panel B uses a complete linkage algorithm. See text for description. Boxed sections correspond to four types of acts that stem from four different conveyances: (1) life estate entail settlements, (2) strict settlements, (3) religious corporations, and (4) other types of conveyances.

Table 2.2: Credit Transactions in Estate Acts

Panel A: Types of Transactions				
V-1	n	share of acts	avg. value	std. dev (min, max)
pay debts				
cites cost of debts	13	0.2	£118	$101\ (28,\ 320)$
cites incomplete transaction	6	0.09	220	$293\ (12,\ 250)$
cites cost and incomplete	7	0.11	91	95 (18, 280)
receive payment	2	0.03	271	(252, 300)
make loan	9	0.14	126	84 (40, 252)
make mortgage	8	0.12		, ,
		n = 65		
Panel B: Types of Debts				
	n	share of pay debts		
Ambiguous - life tenant	15	0.57		
deceased	10	0.38		
Civil Wars	4	0.15		
Other - family charges	4	0.15		
Productive	3	0.11		
		n=26		

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702. Notes: See text for description.

Table 2.3: Shift to New Types of Acts after 1688

Panel A: Preamble Section			1.00	Panel B: Enactment Section			1.00
	1660-1685	1688-1702	difference	-	1660-1685	1689-1702	difference
1. Conveyances				1. Economic transaction			
settlement	0.63	0.55	-0.08	sale	0.45	0.55	0.10
	(0.10)	(0.07)			(0.10)	(0.07)	
strict settlement	0.09	0.25	0.16	lease	0.18	0.20	0.02
	(0.06)	(0.06)			(0.08)	(0.06)	
religious corporation	0.04	0.02	-0.02	make settlement	0.13	0.11	-0.02
-	(0.04)	(0.02)			(0.07)	(0.05)	
other conveyance	0.22	0.14	-0.08	mortgage	0	0.19	0.18**
v	(0.09)	(0.05)				(0.06)	
	` /	, ,		other	0.14	0.02	0.11*
2. Appeal: economic					(0.07)	(0.02)	
cost of debts or portions	0.41	0.25	-0.15	loan	0	0.21	
P	(0.11)	(0.25)			-	(0.04)	
management costs	0.04	0.16	0.12			(010-)	
	(0.05)	(0.06)	0.22	2. Legal clauses			
accident, mistake	0.23	0.21	-0.02	good at law	0.22	0.46	0.23*
decident, imstanc	(0.09)	(0.06)	0.02	good at law	(0.09)	(0.07)	0.20
opportunity	0.18	0.21	0.03	change title	0.13	0.09	-0.04
opportunity	(0.08)	(0.06)	0.00	change true	(0.07)	(0.04)	0.04
incomplete transaction	0.45	0.53	0.08	limits	0.09	0.12	0.02
meompiete transaction	(0.11)	(0.07)	0.00	mmes	(0.06)	(0.05)	0.02
marriage	0.09	0.11	0.02	confirm	0.27	0.25	-0.02
marriage	(0.06)	(0.04)	0.02	Commin	(0.09)	(0.08)	-0.02
	(0.00)	(0.04)		trust	0.09)	0.23	
3. Appeal: legal constraint				trust	U	(0.06)	
general law	0.09	0.04	-0.04			(0.00)	
general law			-0.04	3. Amend Settlement			
life tenant barred	(0.06)	(0.03) 0.53	0.21*		0.13	0.2	0.17
me tenant barred	0.31		0.21	discharge or void		0.3	0.17
• • • •	(0.10)	(0.07)	0.00	1 6 :1 1	(0.07)	(0.07)	0.00
minority	0.45	0.36	-0.08	amend family charges	0.22	0.14	-0.08
	(0.11)	(0.07)			(0.09)	(0.05)	0.10*
trust	0	0.09		protect existing charges	0.05	0.21	0.16*
	0.40	(0.04)	0.00		(0.04)	(0.06)	
claims can be made	0.13	0.11	0.02	n	22	43	
	(0.07)	(0.05)					
4. Proposed reorganization							
pay debts	0.27	0.2	-0.06				
* *	(0.09)	(0.02)					
pay portions	0.27	0.21	0.06				
I V I · · · · ·	(0.09)	(0.06)	- ~ ~				
purchase or replace	0.04	0.23	0.18**				
r stresses of replace	(0.04)	(0.07)	0.10				
	` /	` /					

Source: random sample of 65 acts, $1660\mbox{-}1702.$

Notes: Table reports differences in shares of acts containing a specific conveyance, appeal, or enactment clause before and after 1688. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p < 0.01, ** p < 0.05, * p < 0.1. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Table 2.4: Rise of the Lower Gentry after 1688

Panel A: Petitioners				Panel B: Trustees			
	1660-1685	1688-1702	difference		1660-1685	1688 - 1702	difference
Social Class				Social Class			
nobility	0.22	0.18	-0.04	names a trust	0.31	0.72	0.40***
	(0.09)	(0.06)			(0.10)	(0.07)	
titled gentry	0.41	0.25	-0.15	nobility	0.09	0.11	0.02
knights and baronets	(0.10)	(0.07)			(0.06)	(0.05)	
lower gentry	0.45	0.67	0.22*	titled gentry	0.14	0.25	0.12
(esquires and gentlemen)	(0.10)	(0.07)		knights and baronets	(0.07)	(0.06)	
clergy	0.09	0.02	-0.07	lower gentry	0.27	0.6	0.33**
	(0.06)	(0.02)		(esquires and gentlemen)	(0.09)	(0.07)	
professional	0.04	0.11	0.07	professional	0	0.23	
	(0.05)	(0.05)				(0.06)	
nobility, titled gentry,	0.77	0.58	-0.19	Other characteristics			
MPs	(0.09)	(0.07)		of an inn	0	0.23	
lower gentry,	0.50	0.72	0.22*	(lawyer)		(0.06)	
professionals	(0.10)	(0.07)		of London	0	0.3	
						(0.07)	
Other characteristics				female	0.04	0.09	0.07
MP or related	0.54	0.44	-0.10		(0.04)	(0.04)	
	(0.10)	(0.07)		n	22	43	
female	0.09	0.13	0.05	n	22	40	
	(0.06)	(0.05)					
couple	0.22	0.51	0.28**				
	(0.09)	(0.07)					
n	22	43					

Source: random sample of 65 acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Table reports differences in facts with a type of petitioner or type of trustee before and after 1688. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p < 0.01, ** p < 0.05, * p < 0.1. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

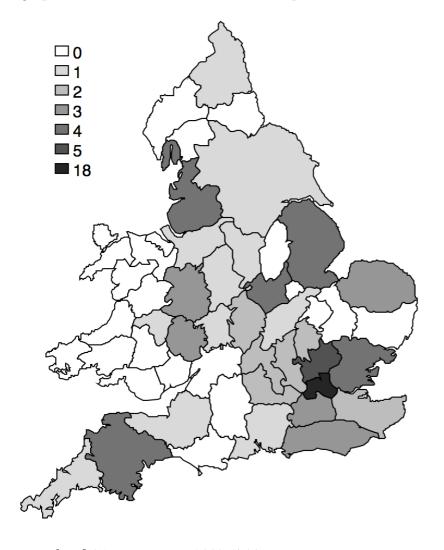
Table 2.5: Economic Transactions Authorized By Estate Acts

May be found to the best of		(I)	(II) and fifth	(III)	(IV)	(V) scenomic transaction in act	(VI) where	(VIII)	(VIII)	(IX) information on third narty
1	-	1662		TO TO TO THE TOTAL OF THE TOTAL	othor	con in page	Worderfor	1677 (14)	EEO cumo	House Commuter MD
10	-	0001		S	onne	sen, rease	worcester, Berks	1677 (14)	250 sum 750 sum	пенну сонуениз, ин-
10		000			*****	:		(00)		
100 Air Act of case like the like interest interest cleared and a second large and a se	21	0001		nkeiy	EOA	Sell	London	1080 (20)		
10 Air Air Company of Parks (1982) 10 Air Air Company (1982) 10 Air	3	1670		yes	ACH	sell	Bucks	1672 (2)		to the celebrated Dr. Richard Busby,
10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10	4	1677			HOP: SOI.	Pease	London	lease 1682 (5)		of Westminster School lease to create market
18 As Act for enabling City During the National Act for an Act for enabling City During Colors and Colors an	,							sold 1685 (8)		sold to (Sir) Stephen Fox (MP) and Christopher Wren
and for ranking Proceeding for Heavy Ferrit North Cheese, and Michalman Bactors, decreased, and and the ranking Proceding for Heavy Ferrit North Cheese, and Michalman Bactors, decreased, and and the ranking Proceding for Heavy Ferrit North Cheese, and the ranking Proceding for Heavy Ferrit North Cheese, and the ranking Proceding for Heavy Ferrit North Cheese, and the ranking Serit Lanking Miller North Cheese, and the ranking Serit Lanking Miller North Cheese, and the ranking Serit Lanking Miller North Cheese, and the ranking Series of the Transic and the Transic and the Cheese for Series View of Transic Lanking Miller North Cheese for Series View of Transic Lanking Miller North Cheese, and the Residual Miller North Cheese for Series View of Thank Lanking Miller North Cheese, and the Residual Miller North Cheese of the Residual Miller North Cheese, and the	ro	1678		likely	VCH	mortgage	London			
100 About to enable Platical Relationship by Figure 1 100 About to enable Platical Relationship by Figure 1 100 About to enable Platical Relationship by Figure 1 100 About to enable Platical Relationship by Figure 1 100 About to enable Platical Relationship by Figure 1 100 About to enable Platical Relationship Platic			to Thomas Cooke and Nicholas Carey,			,				
the Lincoth Line Register to smalled the Presence of Landon Line Register to candon Register to Register to candon Register to the Register to Register to Register to Candon Register to Candon Register to R	9	1685		yes	other	build	London	1686 (1)		
100 An Act for making plots by Mandagea Wilders. An other breaks and Scannard Carmers and Carmers an	-1	1690			HOP, VCH	sell	Surrey	1698 (8)		to the younger branch [of the family]
in the County of Michilenes. 101 An Act for enabling Si Dudyty Cullium Borourt, and the Borourds. 102 An Act for enable gis Dudyty Cullium Borourt, and the Borourds. 103 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 104 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Thankt, and the Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 105 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 106 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 107 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 108 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 109 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 100 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 107 An Act for enable Thomas End of Borourds. 108 An Act for the Sharing end the Monor of Londington alone Latenthian the Comman of Borourds. 108 An Act for the social enable Thomas End of Borourds. 109 An Act for the social enable Thomas End of Borourds. 100 An Act for the social enable Thomas End of Borourds. 100 An Act for the social enable Thomas End of Borourds. 100 An Act for the social end of Borourds. 100 An Act for the social end of the Borourds. 100 An Act for the social end of the Sharing State of the Sharing End of the Sharing	∞	1690		yes	TOS	lease	London	1703 (13) 1708 (18)		to John Cox and to Henry Philp of Stepney, bricklayer William Yates of St. Anne's, Westminster,
103 An Act for making good the law Will of Se William Bactonic, decowed, and a Losse for sizely Winter Section 1 and a Losse			in the County of Middlesex.					1741 (51)	350 sum	or St. George s, Bloomsbury, bricklayer John Lovell of St. Botolph's, Aklgate, joiner, Thomas Laxon or Saxon of the same, bricklayer J. G. Denth's District the little
1913 An Act to consider special briggs growther special six Series Virginia Bracker, and an and search Virginia Clark Hosey in the Honor in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being to commerce after the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne now in being the Remaining of the Ferm of one and thirty Youne Remaining the Remaining of the Ferm of one and the Remaining the Remaining the Remaining of the Remaining the Remaining the Remaining the Remaining and Theorems on the Market of Marchine and Theorems on the Marchine and Theorems and Marchine and Theorems on the Marchine and Theorems and Marchine and Marchine and Marchine and Marchine and Marchine and Marchine and Theorems on the Marchine and Theorems of the Advance of the Advance of the Marchine and	6	1691		likely	other	lease, mortgage	London	1		and Samuer Simpson of St. Dototpii S, Distropsgave, ortextayer
to make a Lowe for extry Venes of Thourt Brone in the Deaks of St. Bodojsh, Aldragone, to make a Lowe for extry Venes of Thourt Brone in the Deaks of St. Bodojsh, Aldragone, to make a constance after the Remainder of the Term of one and thirty Venes nor in being, to be self-of the Nation of the St. Bodojsh, Aldragone, to be self-of the Nation of the Remainder of the Term of one and thirty Venes nor in being, to be self-of the St. Bodojsh, Aldragone, to be self-of the Manner of the Manner of St. William Bardan Barone, decembed, so have been self-of the Manner of the Manner of St. William Bardan and Out House, in Lincohi's lin Fields, yes VCH well, lower, mortgage Strepphire 1702 (7) 3,100 sum and middle Proposes therein mentioned. 1005 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. William Bardan and Out House, in Lincohi's lin Fields, yes VCH self-or sold the Manners to be self-or comble Transcot or also Mary Control of the Manner of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1005 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1005 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1005 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1006 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1006 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1006 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking was Dose. 1006 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and Marking St. Williams and Other Places in the County of Bards. 1006 An Art or comble Transcot of the Mary St. Williams and John Places in the County of Marking and Mary Mary St. Williams and John Places and Leaves a					OPO TOHO	lonco	London	1709 (15)		laces Thomas Dough (MD) was principally a sloth marchant.
1995 An Act for making good the last Will of Sir William Barkham Barcnet, deceased, yes other said where the same for the making of Lands in Practees. 1095 An Act for making Provision for His County of Sabp. 1095 An Act to caush's Tractees to said and Tractems to said the Manor of Winshow in the County of Barcs. 1095 An Act to caush's Tractees to said Anterior Tractems to said the Manor of Winshow in the County of Barcs. 1095 An Act to caush Windows dockwin the Edera of the Manor of Winshow in the County of Barcs. 1096 An Act to caush Windows of goodwin the Edera of the Manor of Winshow in the County of Barcs. 1096 An Act to caush Windows of goodwin the Edera of the Manor of Conductage Lands to the Alands of the Manor of Conductage Lands to the Alands of the Manor of Conductage Lands to the Alands of the Manor of Conductage Lands to the Alands of the Manor of Manor is now estled. 1006 An Act for the said An act for the said Manors and Lands, and Act for the said said for the Manor of Manor is now estled. 1007 An Act for the said said manors and Lands, and Act for the said said for the Manor of Manor is now estled. 1008 An Act for caush Princes to said early for the Princes in the County of Norfolk, in Tractees, to be settled in the Tractems of other Lands to the Daks of Prancis Puredor Ederate Alands and Princes and Said And For the Said Manors and Lands, and Act for the Said Said Manors and Lands, and Prances and Said Manor is nown to the Princes in t						Separ	FOR	(01) 6011		each round in the country from the converting Thanke House
to be suld for Pythemet of like Debts, and an unking Provision for this Children. 1995 An Act for vesting the Macro of Machle's in the County of Salab,, and Act for vesting the Macro of Machle's to sell a Macro of Independent of the San Robert of County of Salab, in the County of Salab, in Literachies Independent of the San Robert of Salab Macro of Lang Macro of Salab Macro of Lang Macr		1695		yes	other	sell	Norfolk, Middlesex	1699 (4) 1697 (2)	421 sum 3,100 sum	Ephraim Beauchamp, of London, mason
168 An Act for vesting the Manor of Mahely, in the County of Sabp,. 169 An Act for vesting the Manor of Mahely, in the County of Sabp,. 169 An Act for onable Trustees or sell a Message, Garden and Out Hones, in Lincoln's Inn Fields, 169 An Act to canable Trustees or sell a Message, Garden and Out Hones, in Lincoln's Inn Fields, 169 An Act to canable Trustees or sell a Message, Garden and Out Hones, in Lincoln's Inn Fields, 169 An Act to canable Trustees or for he making a web Dock, 169 An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor or ones Alones of the Manor or ones An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor or ones An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor of Mahely of Surgery, 160 An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor of Mahely of Surgery, 160 An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor of Mahely of Surgery, 160 An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor of Mahely Surgery, 160 An Act to canable Trustees or for the Manor of Mahely Surgery, 160 An Act for the said of a general yearly Value 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Mahely Surgery, 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Waltwey 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Mahely Surgery, 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Mahely Surgery 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Mahely Surgery 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Mahely Surgery 160 An Act for the said of the Manor of Ordington and Mahely Surgery 160 An Act for the said settling or other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the Proteins of Other Lands to be settled in the North of the Surgery and Tenements, 170 An Act for the said Series are the			to be sold for Payment of his Debts, and making Provision for his Children.							
log An Act to enable Trustees to self a Message, Garden and Out House, in Lincohès Inn Fields, yes SOL self in Lincohès Inn Fields, yes SOL self in Lincohès Inn Fields, yes SOL self in Lincohès Garden and Out House, in Lincohès Inn Fields on An Act to enable Trustees to its Marcy for the making a vet Dock, and Inny provides Lands and Temerants to be settled to the same Uses. 1666 An Act to enable Trustees to rise Marcy for the making a vet Dock, and Inny Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and with the Monta Garden Son eventuel. 1666 An Act to enable Making Survey. 1666 An Act to enable Wileshow in the County of Backs, and Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and with the Mancr of Winshow in the County of Backs, and other Montas to be advanced by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and with the Mancr of Winshow in the County of Backs, and other Montas to be advanced by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Edler to purchase Lands in the County of Sussex. 1686 An Act for the sale of the Mancr of Lordington alias Lutrington and Whittwey yes VCH sell of the sale of the Mancr of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the sale of the Mancr of Lordington alias Lutrington and Whittwey was and for leging out 5,000. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1698 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1702 An Act for the vesting and estitle county of Sussex. 1702 An Act for the vesting and stitle for purchasing Lands or Renats, the vesting and for purchasing Lands or Renats, the vesting Lands or Renats and Parameters. 1702 An Act for the vesting and Suspense and Theoremetes. 1702 An Act for one best Lands for purchasing Lands or Renats, to be settled to the same Uses.		1695		sas	VCH	sell, lease, mortgage	Shropshire	1702 (7)		
late Sir Robert Savayer's Knight, decreased, and for purchased and Tencements to be settled to the same Uses. In Sight An Act to enable Travetees to raise Money for the making a ver Dock, and improving the Estate of the Marquess and Marchianess of Tawistock and improving the Estate of the Marquess and Marchianess of Tawistock and in the County of Surray. In Sight An Act to enable Nicholas Goodwin the Estler and other Monies arising thereby, and other Lounds to be settled to the same dass and Lands in south Pickenham, and other Junes of other Lands to be settled in lieu thereof, in purchasing other Lands to be settled in lieu thereof, and other Places as the said Manors and Lands, and other Places as the said Manors and Lands, and other Places are altered to the same Uses as the said Manors and Lands, and other Places of the Lands to be settled to the Lands to be extend in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to the Lands to be extend in the Purchase of the Lands to be settled to the Lands to the Lands to be settled to the Lands the Lands the Lands the Lands the Lands the La		1695		yes	TOS	sell	London	1700 (5)		(apparently) Sir Thomas Powys,
and improving the Estate of the Marquess and Marchisonese of Tavistock and Indiventing the Estate of the Marquess and Marchisonese of Tavistock and Indiventing the Estate of the Marquess and Marchisonese of Tavistock as a forther thire, in the County of Survey. 1686 An Act to camble Nicholas Goodwin the Effect and Nicholas Goodwin the Effect and Order Mouration of Backs, Withshown in the County of Backs, With a said Nicholas Goodwin the Effect on parameters and other Mourates Lands of a generary search Value to parameters by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Effect to parameters by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Effect on parameters and other Mourating Onder Localisation and Whittwey was and other Mourating Onder Localisation and Manors and Lands in and forther backs of the Manor of Christian Manors and Lands, and other Places in the County of Sussex and for laying out the Mourating Onder Localisation Beautiful Manors and Lands, and other Places in the County of Northch, in Trustees, to be sold, in partners of other Lands to be settled in literal the County of Sussex and Englands and Christian Lands, Titthes and Therements, in the County of Sussex, and the same less as the said Manors and Lands, and other layers are and sands and Places in the Reparence of the Lands and Places in Results and Suspense of the Lands, and Christian Lands, Titthes and Therements, and the same of the Darks of Francis Places of Francis Places of Francis Places of Francis Places of Places in Lands, Titthes and Therements and Lands, in the County of Bederick and Middlessex, in the County of Bederick of the Parameters of th			late Sir Robert Sawyer's Knight, deceased, and for purchasing other Lands and Tenements to be settled to the same Uses.							Sawyer's successor in the attorney-generalship
1696 An Act for each each of Nicholas Goodwin the Younger, osell the Manor of Winskow in the County of Bucks, and Nicholas Goodwin the Edler and with the Manor anging threely, and the Manor anging threely, and the Manor anging threely, and the Manor of Winskow in the County of Bucks, and other Monies to be advanced by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Edler to purchase Lands of a gester yearly Value to be surfield. 1698 An Act for the sale of the Manor of Lordington alias Lurtington and Whitway and divers Lands in the County of Sussex, and for the sale of the Manor of Lordington alias Lurtington and Whitway and Charles in the County of Norfolk in Trustees, to be sold, and for the vesting and settlided cannot be settled in the Purchasing of Norfolk in Trustees, to be sold, and other Places in the County of Norfolk in Trustees, to be sold, and for the whole as a single by Substantial State of Places in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled or canable Thereses to sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, in the Purchase of the Lands to be settled or canable Thereses to sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in the County of Suck and the Substantial Lands, Thursteen the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in the County of Bedford and Windlesex, in the County of Bedford	14			yes	VCH	lease, build, mortgage	Surrey	1700 (5)		
and other Monics arising thereby, to purchase Lands of a greater yearly Value to purchase Lands of the Same Uses and Manor of Lordington and Whitwey and divers Lands in the County of Sussex and Givers Lands in the County of Sussex and Givers Lands in the County of Sussex and Givers Lands in the County of Suspension in purchasing other Lands to be settled in Trustees, to be sold, and other Places in the County of Safethereof, in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to such and the Breaks of Prancis Purchase to a sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, so to be vested, are and shand settled to such and the Debts of Francis Purchase of sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements of the Payment of the Debts of Francis Purchase of Samis Purchy Esquire, decessed. ITO An Art of or vested, and for purchasing Lands of Rents, to be settled to the same Uses.	15	1696		likely	VCH	sell	Buckinghamshire	1697 (1)		It was conveyed to Charles Twitty and Samuel Brewster in trust for William Lowndes (Secretary to the Treasury)
1689 An Act for the value and the state of the Manor of Lordington alias Lutrington and Whitway yes VCH sell in the County of Sussex and daves Lutrington and Whitway and daves Lutrington and whitway in the County of Sussex and for laying out 5,000. 1700 An Act for the vertain Manors and Lands in south Pickenham, and of the Pince and settling certain Manors and Lands, be sold, and of the Monies arising by Sale thereof, in the Monies arising by Sale thereof, in the Monies arising by Sale thereof, in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to settled to such and the same Uses as the said Manors and Lands, so to be vessel, are and stand settled. 1702 An Act to caule Prateac of sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements and Tenements, likely VCH sell Bedforchine 1772 (a) 1702 An Act for vessel, are and sond Sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middlesce, in Theorem of the Debts of Prateach Sell and for purchasing Lands or Rents, to be settled to the same Uses.			and with the Monies arising thereby, and other Monies to be advanced by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Elder to purchase Lands of a greater yearly Value to ba cartied to the some I loss as the said Manories more settled							
in purchasing other Lands to be settled in lieu thereof. 170 An Act for the vesting and setting certain Manors and Lands in south Pickenham, An Act for the vesting and setting certain Manors and Lands, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, and for laying out the Monies and Lands, so to be vested, are and shand sender to see settled to such and the same Uses as the said Manors and Lands, Tithes and Tenements, so to be vested, are and shand sender the Coresed. TOZ An Act for vesting certain Messages and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middleseck, in the County of Bedford and Middleseck, to be settled to the same Uses.	16	1698		yes	ACH	sell	Sussex	1698-9 (0-1)		(probably) bought by Richard Peckham, who died in possession in 1718
and other Places in the Country of Nordolk. In Transces, to be sold, and for having out the Monies artifage by Sale thereof, in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to such and the same Uses as the said Manors and Lands, so to be weed, and so sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, to the Payment of the Date of Francis Purcky Esquire, decessed. I702 An Art of weeking certain Messages and Tenements in the Country of Bedford and Middlesce, in the Country of Bedford and Middlesce, to be exteld to the such a sold, and for purchasing Lands or Rents, to be exteld to the same Uses.		1700		liboly	нЭЛ	llos	Morfoll	(6) (3)		nonward it to Thomas Ohnto Bea
in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to such and the same Uses at the stand Manors and Lands, so to be vascled, as and stands actived. 1702 An Act to enable Trustees to sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, for the Payment of the Debts of Francis Purcky Esquire, deceased. 1702 An Act for vesting certain Messages and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, and the Payment of Section of Middlesex and Middlesex and Middlesex are to be settled to the sone, Usas.		7100		lineiy	H 0 4	TI SEE	INOLIGIES	1102 (2)		conveyen to 0 monas cance, Esq., Clerk of the Crown in Chancery
1.702 An Act to enable Trustees to sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, likely VCH sell Warwickshire 1.702 (0) for the Pownent of the Debts of Francis Purefoy Esquire, deceased. 1.702 An Act for vessing certain Messages and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in Trustees, to be settled to the sone Usas. to be settled to the sone Usas.			in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to such and the same Cases as the said Manors and Lands, so to be vested, are and stand settled.							
1702 An Act for vesting certain Messuages and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middlesex in Thratees, to be acted to the sum of year. The second of the sum of	18			likely	VCH	sell	Warwickshire	1702 (0)		to Sir Nathan Wright, Keener of the Great Seal
				likely	VCH	sell	Bedfordshire Middlesex	1716 (14)		alienated it to Benjamin Morris
			in Trustees, to be sold, and for purchasing Lands or Rents, to be settled to the same Uses.							

Source: 30% matched sample of random sample of 65 acts to transactions from secondary sources.

Notes: VCH. Victoria County History; HOP. History of Parliament; SOL. Survey of London; JOHC. Journals of the House of Commons; other - local history of the county's transactions. See Appendix Section B.1 for details on sources and matching method.

Figure 2.3: Geographic Distribution of Estate Acts: Importance of Middlesex and London



Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Figure plots the counts of estate acts across counties.

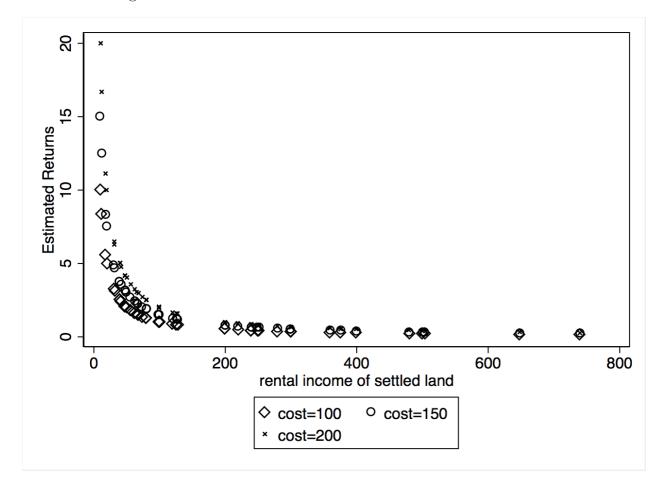


Figure 2.4: Estimated Increased in Returns from an Estate Act

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Figure plots the estimated return of an estate act as a function of the annual rental income of property in an act (acts with rental income less than £1,500). Returns estimated by: $R_i = C_i/B_i$ for estate act i. C_i : range of costs estimated from Bill of Costs in Ellis (1799). Hollow diamonds: assume cost of obtaining an act is £100; hollow circles: assume cost of obtaining an act is £200. B_i : annual rental income coded from each estate act. See text and Appendix Section B.1 for description of coding.

Chapter 3

Political Support in the Commons:

The Role of Occupations and

Elections of Members of Parliament

3.1 Introduction

The political changes in late seventeenth-century England and their economic implications have been the subject of much debate by economists and economic historians. Most have focused on if and how constitutional changes with the Glorious Revolution of 1688 improved the security of domestic property rights by credibly constraining the monarch from expropriation. The specific framework put forth by North and Weingast (1989) has been criticized (Clark 1996; Stasavage 2000; Hoppit 2011; Coffman et al. 2013). There is, however, consensus that the Glorious Revolution of 1688 was important for confirming parliamentary supremacy that began with the Civil Wars and Commonwealth periods (Hoppit 2011; O'Brien 2011; Pincus and Robinson 2014; Jha 2015).

There are three main themes in the literature. First, work argues that the Glorious Revolution ushered in a new political economic equilibrium with the development of political parties after 1690 (Stasavage 2007; Pincus 2009; Pincus and Robinson 2014). Second, historians have also emphasized that the public played an important role influencing parliamentary composition as it saw increasing political awareness at the national level and England's economy was growing and transforming. Elections, for example, became increasingly important events during this era (Kishlansky 1986; Harris 1993). Last, much of the work by economists emphasizes the role of new wealth holders or commercial and financial interests in opposing the monarch and leading to institutional change (e.g. through leading to a stronger parliament) throughout the medieval and early modern era (North and Weingast 1989; Stasavage 2007; Acemoglu, Johnson, and Robinson 2005; Jha 2015; Angelucci et al. 2017).

Part of our understanding of how the political economy of the late seventeenth century is constrained by limited and inaccessible individual-level data on the political, economic, and social interests within parliament and specifically within the House of Commons. In this paper, I present evidence on the three themes above by examining how MP occupations (e.g. merchants) and electoral interests (e.g. type of constituency an MP represented) influenced their political support in parliament. I use a new panel dataset of the population of MPs (approximately 3,000 unique individuals) who were elected to parliament from 1660 (the Restoration of the Monarchy) to 1702 (the succession of Anne, as settled by Parliament with the 1701 Act of Settlement).²

First, I use multinomial logit models to examine the choice to support the Court and Opposition from 1660 to 1685. The Court were considered supporters of the monarch; the Opposition (also called Country) members generally supported a stronger parliament and

¹See Chapter 3 in Pincus (2009), Broadberry and Wallis (2017), Wallis et al. (2018), Kelly and Ó Gráda (2016), and for recent work on the economic changes of the era related to growth, structural change, and innovation and productivity.

²It is part of a larger project compiling information on the population of MPs elected from the fourteenth to the mid nineteenth century. The data are collected and compiled from the History of Parliament research project. For this paper, I use data collected from Henning (1983) and Hayton et al. (2002).

were against the extravagance and Catholicism of the Court. I code political party affiliation from contemporary division lists for the period and then combine this information with the panel dataset. The evidence shows that the occupation of MPs was important in the choice of political support. MPs holding positions in the military and overseas trading companies are more likely to support the Court. Regarding elections, the Court also gained support from MPs representing borough constituencies, which could have limited franchises as well as be under the influence of large landholders.

The Opposition, in contrast, drew support from MPs who held positions in domestic companies (e.g. Mercers' Company) and from MPs who had been elected during the Civil War or Commonwealth eras (an important type of parliamentary experience). The evidence suggests that electoral interests were important for the Opposition to garner support. MPs who were elected via contest or represented counties, which often had a broader franchise, are more likely to support the Opposition.

In a complementary exercise, I use information on voting to show that political party support could also translate into policy change that would have given parliament a significant power over the monarchy. I specifically examine how MP occupation and electoral interests influenced voting on the First Exclusion Bill, which sought to alter the succession of the monarchy by excluding James, Duke of York, from becoming monarch. MPs who were against the bill (supported the monarch) were also likely to be affiliated with the Court (e.g., military). Support for the Bill (for a stronger parliament) was larger than the groups that supported the Opposition. MPs who had inherited an estate or represented a constituency in Middlesex supported Exclusion. The evidence suggests that the Opposition coalition changed and that geography of political support was important by 1679.

In general the patterns are consistent with the monarch's use of patronage to influence support for the Court. Additional estimates show that MPs who held positions in the royal household or in local governments from 1679 to 1685 were more likely to support the Court.

The evidence suggests that James II attempted to target MPs holding local government positions that were absent on the Exclusion Bill. The patterns also suggest that the political changes were not only amongst elite but also tied to the public sphere and electoral politics (Harris 1993; Pincus 2009). Without any general elections from 1661 to 1679, the Opposition increasingly grew from contested by-elections.

The second part of the paper examines who supported the Whigs and Tories from 1689 to 1702. The development of the two-party system was "the most significant development in parliamentary history during this period" (Henning 1983) but it is still the subject of debate as to whether and how the Opposition led to the development of the Whigs and the Court led to the development of the Tories (Harris 1993). Tories sought to protect the interests of the Church of England and the rights of the monarch. Whigs promoted toleration of religious Dissenters and had a contractual theory of the monarchy (Bogart 2016). The two also had a different vision of the development of the English state. Tories favored a political economy based on land and the Whigs favored a political economy based on finance and commerce (Pincus 2009). I combine political party information from Bogart (2016) with the MP panel to examine if and how support for the Whigs and Tories changed from the groups that supported the Court and Opposition.

The patterns suggest that there was both continuity and change in political support from Opposition to Whig and Court to Tory, which is consistent with a new political economic equilibrium after the Glorious Revolution (Pincus 2009; Pincus and Robinson 2014). There was more continuity in occupations for support for the Court and Tories. For example, MPs who held positions in local governments, military, and overseas trading companies were more likely to be affiliated with the Court and the Tory party. Different from the previous era, however, Tories were more likely to gain support from occupations that were a-political before the Glorious Revolution, e.g. lawyers. There appears to have been more change from Opposition to Whig. None of the occupations (e.g. domestic companies) that supported the

Opposition continued to be affiliated with the Whigs. Second, there was a change in the role of elections and types of constituencies influenced an MP's political support. For example, there was a switch in the role of boroughs v. county constituencies. MPs representing boroughs were more likely to support the Court from 1661 to 1685 but were more likely to support the Whigs from 1689 to 1702.

The first contribution of the paper is to document new facts about the interests in parliament for the period from 1660 to 1702: "so few studies have attempted to span the Glorious Revolution" (Harris 1993: 3). The literature often focuses on the significance or insignificance of the Glorious Revolution or studies specific periods before or after the Glorious Revolution.³ I am able to examine political support for the entire period because of the new dataset on MPs. Previous work on the interests in parliament often relies on lists and information in the History of Parliament research project, The House of Commons, 1660-1690 (Henning 1983) and The House of Commons, 1690-1715 (Hayton et al. 2002),⁴ which is the main source for the data used in this paper. While comprehensive, it was inaccessible and difficult to use because it was not available in a tabular or computerized format. Research was thus limited in the types of patterns that could be documented and analyses that could be done.

Second, the paper contributes to our substantive knowledge of the era, which also informs our understanding of more general research questions. There has been much debate about if and how institutions changed with the Glorious Revolution of 1688 and if it subsequently influenced England's development. Most work by economists focuses on the framework of credible commitment, constitutional change, and security of property rights (North and Weingast 1989; Clark 1996; Acemoglu, Johnson, and Robinson 2005; Coffman et al. 2013; Jha 2015; Murrell 2017). This paper instead revisits the role of MPs' occupations and also examines if elections were important for political support. The findings are consistent

³Pincus (2009) summarizes the historiography. For examples of period studies on Charles II's reign, see Ogg (1962) and Seaward (1988).

⁴See Erickson and Hamilton (2018), Bogart (2018), and Angelucci et al. (2017) for recent work using information on constituencies, lists found in the surveys, and MP biographies.

with an increasingly important role of elections, the broader public, and a new political economic equilibrium after the Glorious Revolution (Kishlansky 1986; Harris 1993; Pincus and Robinson 2014).

3.2 Historical Background: Parliament and Development of Political Parties

This section first provides background on parliamentary meetings and electoral institutions. It then summarizes the history of the Court and Opposition and Whigs and Tories in England's government at the end of the seventeenth century.

Parliamentary Meetings and Electoral Institutions: 1660-1702

Four different monarchs reigned from 1660 to 1702: (1) Charles II from the Restoration of the Monarchy in 1660 to his death in 1685; (2) James II from 1685 to this forced exile with the Glorious Revolution of 1688; (3) William and Mary with their coronation in 1689 until Mary's death in 1694; (4) William III until his death in 1702. Table 3.1 presents summary information on each monarch's reign and changes in parliamentary meetings during this era. Elections and parliamentary meetings - their beginnings and endings - were technically decided by the monarch. The monarch decided when to call and dissolve *parliaments* which required general elections. In general the monarch called parliament to receive revenue (also called supply).

There is a noticeable difference in the length of parliaments and timing of general elections. There were twelve parliaments from 1660 to 1702 (column (III)). There were five parliaments and six general elections over twenty four years under Charles II (column (III)).⁵ After the passage of the Triennial Act of 1664, the monarch was not required to dissolve or call a

⁵One in 1660, in 1661, two in 1679 and one in 1681.

parliament after any length of time. The Cavalier Parliament lasted until 1679 and it did not convene for several years, specifically in 1672 and 1676. Parliament was not called at the end of Charles II's reign from 1682 to 1684 and for most of James II's reign from 1686 to 1688.

Parliamentary meetings and elections changed after the Glorious Revolution of 1688. There were more general elections per year (six parliaments and six general elections over thirteen years) from 1689 to 1702. After the passage of the Mutiny Act and more restrictive supply bills, the monarch was required to call parliament annually for renewals to power of court-martial over the army and to receive extraordinary revenue (supply) (Randall 1916: 665; Cox 2012). The Triennial Act of 1694 ensured more frequent elections. After its passage, parliaments had a maximum life of three years, i.e. an election had to be called at least every three years. The monarch, however, could still decide to dissolve a parliament anytime in a three year window.

The Commons and Lords passed legislation during individual sessions, which were ended via prorogation by the monarch or a commission. There were 39 different sessions of parliament with varying lengths (columns (IV) and (V)) from 1660 to 1702. Parliamentary sessions became significantly longer like because of institutional changes after the Glorious Revolution that mitigated conflict between the monarch and parliament.⁶

Parliament, and the Commons in particular, was not a unitary actor always against the monarch during this period. The House of Commons was a body of elected representatives from two types of constituencies: boroughs (217) and counties (52). There were approximately 500 different MPs elected to each parliament (column (VII)). In general, Harris (1993) concludes the franchise was broad and that by the early eighteenth century about one in four

⁶Recent work suggests that the length of time of a session was an outcome of how parliament passed supply bills and the conflict between the monarch and parliament in a session under Charles II and James II. Resolving this conflict improved parliament's passage of legislation and likely increased the length of sessions. See Dimitruk (forthcoming).

adult males had the right to vote. For example, landholders with a 40 shilling freehold could vote in counties. It was not a particularly restrictive qualification: in Yorkshire, about 8,000 property holders could vote during this period (Harris 1993: 17). Boroughs, however, saw significant variation in the franchise depending on the type of property held. Westminster's franchise of "inhabitant householders" enabled 25,000 men to vote in 1679. Shaftesbury, a borough in Wiltshire, had a franchise granted to people paying scot and lot, allowing 332 men to vote in 1679 and 12 men after it was restricted to members of the corporation in 1685 (Harris 1993: 18).

While the franchise may have been broad for the era, the choice to elect an a specific person at election time was often limited (Harris 1993: 19). Several types of boroughs, such as pocket boroughs (those "controlled by local families with large landholdings") and venal boroughs ("where candidates were able to bribe their way into the Commons"), are evidence of how landlords could influence parliamentary selection and electoral outcomes (Harris 1993). The period did see significant changes to elections. Not only were there more frequent elections after the Glorious Revolution, but there was an increase in contests (competitive elections) towards the end of the Cavalier Parliament (discussed below). More competitive elections and transitions in electoral institutions to support the competitions have been argued to be important for determining political support during this era (Kishlansky 1986: Chapter 7).

From Court to Party

The monarchy and House of Lords were restored with Charles II in 1660 after the Civil Wars and Commonwealth under Oliver Cromwell. Charles II's reign was marked by general support from Cavaliers or Royalists in parliament but also increasing instability. He generally sought to call parliament to grant revenue to fight the First and Second Anglo Dutch War and disband with parliament once it was no longer in session. In general, parliament's incentive was to legislate on supply so that they could meet and pass other legislative initiatives.⁷

⁷See Dimitruk (forthcoming) for an overview.

Charles II sought to influence parliament through patronage (creating a Court) so that parliament would support and finance efforts to fight the Anglo Dutch Wars. He also relied on the cooperation of the royalist gentry in parliament to re-establish royal authority over the militia and "crack down on potential [domestic] enemies" (Seaward 1988; Malcolm 1992). His reign, however, saw a growing Opposition (sometimes called Country) in parliament. The Opposition during the Cavalier Parliament was a loose coalition of members of a variety of religions who were against Charles II's Court and administration as well as arbitrary government (Harris 1993: 75).

The first general election in eighteen years (in 1679) saw an organized Opposition win a majority in the Commons. The win has been attributed to new methods of organizing MPs at elections by Lord Shaftesbury (Ashley Cooper) and their strategy to include the public via "popular petitions and addresses to the Crown, and instructions to newly-elected MPs informing them how their constituents wanted them to act in the ensuing parliament" in opposing a Catholic monarch (Harris 1993: 91).

After the general election in 1679, the Opposition initiated legislation in the Commons to exclude James, Duke of York, and heir to the throne from inheriting the monarchy leading to the Exclusion Crisis (1679-81) whereby the monarch successively closed parliament in order to end the bill. A "language of party, and the terms Whig and Tory" developed with the Exclusion Crisis (Harris 1993: 81). Contemporaries noted that a majority of MPs could be called Whigs and there was an identifiable opposite called Tories. Whigs during this period supported some version of parliamentary supremacy: from radical anti-monarchists or republicans to parliamentary constitutionalists. Tories favored a strong monarchy: from championing divine right of the monarch and royal absolutism to a legal monarchy and founded on rule of law (Harris 1993: 82).8 The Whig-Opposition lost support of the public

⁸There was a religious dimension to their views. Whigs were sympathetic to religious Dissenters (for greater toleration within protestantism) and Tories supported the Anglican church. Both Whigs and Tories were violently anti-Catholic (Harris 1993: 82).

'out of doors' with the 1681 Parliament (the last of Charles II's reign), with an orchestrated effort by Tories to show support for Charles II both in parliament and publicly (Pincus 2009: 92; Harris 1993: 105-106). Charles II died after ruling without parliament from 1681 to 1685.

James II became monarch (as a Catholic) in 1685 after Charles II's death with large popular and parliamentary support (Pincus 2009: Chapter 4). His reign was short but saw significant political changes. He called parliament to re-grant revenue from customs and excise. James II ended the session after about two months and ruled without parliament for the rest of his reign. Current work argues that he sought to create an absolutist state by building an unconstrained military as well as asserting royal control over localities, corporations, and packing parliament. One way he sought to accomplish this goal was through re-chartering of local boroughs and companies (Pincus 2009).

The Glorious Revolution of 1688 forced James II to leave England and made Mary and William, rulers of the Dutch Republic, monarchs. While work has debated the constitutional significance of the event, the period under William and Mary confirmed parliamentary supremacy and saw the development of the two party system. The 1690s were divided and contentious between Whigs and Tories. They drew support from different bases: the landed gentry supported the Tories; larger aristocrats and financial interests supported the Whigs (Bogart 2016). There is a debate as to whether the Tories had origins in the Court and the Whigs and origins in the Opposition from the previous era (Harris 1993). If and how they did would provide insight to the role of the Glorious Revolution in generating a new political economic equilibrium. For example, work argues that Whigs were ultimately successful during this era and were able to implement a new vision for the English state with policies favoring finance and trade instead of policies favoring landed wealth (Pincus 2009; Pincus and Robinson 2014).

3.3 Political Support of Members of Parliament: Data and Methodology

Despite the rich history on the political developments of the era, our understanding is limited by lack of accessible, comprehensive data on Members of Parliament (MPs) elected to the House. For example, economists emphasize the importance of domestic wealth holders or commercial and financial interests in leading political and institutional changes to constrain the monarch and support parliament. Historians, however, have also emphasized changes in the public sphere, which was seeing a growing and transforming economy and increasing political awareness at the national level. The public played an important role influencing parliamentary composition particularly via elections. I use a new dataset of MPs to provide evidence on these arguments.

The aim is to estimate the role of an MP's occupation or electoral interests in choosing to support a particular political group. We may expect MPs with different occupations to support different political groups. For example, commercial interests or merchants may in general support the Opposition because a stronger parliament would be better for secure trading rights. There may be variation across commercial interests because some trades (e.g. overseas) may have been subject to greater expropriation risk from the monarch (Jha 2015). If so, MPs with commercial interests in overseas trade may have been more likely to support the Court to secure their trading rights under the current regime.

Data

I use a new dataset of the population of MPs elected to parliament to examine who supported the Court or Opposition and Whigs or Tories.⁹ It is a panel dataset of approximately 3,000 unique MPs sitting in 39 sessions of parliament (approximately 20,000 MP-session observa-

⁹The dataset is part of a larger project compiling the same information for all MPs elected from 1386-1832 with gaps from 1422 to 1504 and during the Civil War and Interregnum era (1640-1659).

tions). It contains details on each MP's constituency as well as a variety of time-varying and fixed characteristics.¹⁰ The characteristics are coded from two fields: (1) background, with information on family and education and (2) offices, with information on an MP's positions and offices, which are broadly defined. The background field is an MP-background-time list and the office field is an MP-position-time list. The office list, for example, has approximately 30,000 unique data points.

The dataset can be used in additional applications by geo-coding the constituencies and positions in local government to use with GIS. It is also possible to format and organize the dataset to use with social network tools, for example to illustrate and study familial networks of MPs or shared connections via committees or commissions.

Methodology and Summary Statistics

To investigate how occupation and electoral interests influenced an MPs decision to support the Court or Opposition and the Whigs and Tories, I use multinomial logit models of the form:

$$Party_{itj} = \alpha + Occupation'_{i}\beta + Election'_{itj}\gamma + X'_{i}\delta + \Psi_{j} + \epsilon_{itj}, \tag{3.1}$$

for an MP i, sitting in a session of parliament t in a parliament j.

Because of the change from Court and Opposition to Tory and Whig after 1688, I split the sample and estimate two separate specifications. From 1661 to 1685, $Party_{itj}$ is a categorical variable equal to 0 if an MP is unaffiliated, to 1 if an MP is affiliated with the Court, and to 2 if an MP is affiliated with the Opposition. I do not include data from the Convention Parliament of 1660 because only Opposition lists exist, which the historical literature emphasizes was different than the Opposition or Country members of the 1670s

¹⁰The original database contains a list of MPs elected from 1660 to 1690 and from 1690 to 1715. I format and compile the two lists to create the panel.

and 1680s (Jones 1964). From 1689 to 1702, $Party_{itj}$ is a categorical variable equal to 0 if an MP is unaffiliated, to 1 if an MP is affiliated with the Tories, and to 2 if an MP is affiliated with the Whigs. X_i contains an MP's occupation, $Election_{itj}$ contains an MP's election information, X_i contains other MP fixed characteristics (education, birth order) that could be correlated with either an MP's occupation or electoral interests, and Ψ_j is a set of parliament fixed effects. The estimates of β and γ reported below are thus interpreted as deviations from the mean within a specific parliament.

All occupations in $Occupation_i$ are defined as an MP holding a specific position before entering parliament. It is thus not likely an outcome of an MP's political support. For example, and MP did not become a member of company after supporting the Opposition or Court. The electoral variables, however, are likely influenced by unobservables. For example, new organizational techniques during this era made targeting elections or specific constituencies possible to ensure an MP was elected who would support the party of interest. While parliament fixed effects may address some of these concerns, there are likely unobservables that cannot be directly controlled for at this time. I use the correlations here as a starting point for further work.

I code political party affiliations from 1661 to 1685 using contemporary division lists like previous historical studies.¹¹ Division lists during this era were compiled to identify MPs that would likely support a piece of legislation or as part of political satire on corruption in parliament. For example, one list *Flagellum Parliamentarian* was a "Sarcastic Notice" identifying MPs who were pensioners or placemen in the government. In total, I code a set of fourteen contemporary division lists. I code *Opposition* MPs and *Court* MPs. Guided by the historical literature, which argues parties were not organizationally coherent during this period, an MP is considered unaffiliated until a session has a list. The MP is then becomes a supporter of the party if they are found on a session list. If he is not found on a session list,

¹¹See Bogart (2016) for an overview of division lists.

he becomes unaffiliated. MPs can switch between parties across sessions but can only be a supporter of one party during a session. Only one session has MPs who are both affiliated with the Court and Opposition (in 1677), because of the timing of the lists, I assume MPs switched from the Court to the Opposition.

Bogart (2016, 2018) codes political party membership for Whigs and Tories from 1690 to 1754. I merge this dataset to the MP dataset and follow the conservative coding for MPs elected from 1690 to 1702: an MP has to be found on all division lists in a given parliament to be considered a member of the party. I then merge the political party dataset to the MP dataset. An MP can be a member of the majority party, either a *Whig* or a *Tory*, in a given parliament. Current work is coding division lists for the Convention Parliament of 1689.

Panel A of Table 3.2 reports shares of MPs who are affiliated with the Court or Opposition from 1661 to 1685 and with the Tories and Whigs from 1689 to 1702. About 29% of MPs were affiliated with the Court from 1661 to 1685 while only 7% were affiliated with the Opposition.

Figure 3.1 shows how the share of MPs with political party affiliations evolved from 1660 to 1702. Throughout the entire period, at least 30% and at most 60% of MPs are affiliated with a political group. The Court grew under Charles II. This is more clearly seen in the share of MPs who held positions in the royal household under Charles II (Figure C.4 in the Appendix). While the Court technically had a majority and grew, the historical literature emphasizes the strength and successes of the Opposition by the end of the period. Lists exist which identify a large number of MPs who were in Opposition by 1677. Consistent with Kishlansky (1986), Figure C.1 in the Appendix shows that a growing share of MPs gained seats in contested by-elections from 1661 to 1679, which could be partly responsible for the success of the Opposition. The general elections of 1679, leading to the First Exclusion Parliament in 1679, changed the political composition of parliament: many Court MPs lost their seats and Opposition MPs were elected.

The Tories were relatively stronger after the general election of 1690 - a contentious political event - that also coincided with a Tory ministry. Around 1693, the "Whig Junto" ministry was beginning to be established by William. The ministry change was complete after 1694. The Whigs held the majority after the general election of 1695, but had lost influence by the end of the William's reign. The general elections of 1701 gave the Tories the advantage but there was not a clear majority in the Commons (Hayton et al. 2002). The patterns are consistent with Pincus (2009) and Pincus and Robinson (2014) who emphasize the eventual success of the Whig vision of England's state formation by 1696. The patterns also support that any constitutional changes immediately after the Glorious Revolution with respect to public finance needed support from the Tories (Cox 2012).

Building on the historical literature, I examine how different types of MP occupation influenced political support: professional lawyers, commercial interests, military, and if an MP had inherited land. I code MP occupation from the background and office fields. I pull the occupation of interest (e.g. a position in a company) and create a list of all MPs with the occupation from either the background field or the offices field. The list is then merged to the panel.

I code four main times of occupations. Professional lawyers are MPs who were qualified to practice common law (called to the bar). MPs with commercial interests are defined as holding a position in a domestic, overseas, mining, or banking company (Bank of England after its creation in 1694). MPs with military positions are defined as ever holding a position (colonel, major) in a local militia (county) or other type of regiment (2nd Dragoon Guards). MPs who had inherited land are those that had succeeded to an estate anytime before entering parliament.

As an example, Figure C.2 reports the shares of MPs who held different types of commercial interests before entering parliament: domestic companies (e.g. Haberdashers' Company, Mercers' Company); overseas trading companies (e.g. East India Company, Royal African

Company, Levant Company); local merchant companies (Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle or Bristol); and MPs who held a directorship in the Bank of England. Local merchant companies were corporations associated with a specific geographic area (e.g. Newcastle or Bristol) but were also given monopoly trading on overseas trade. A full list of the companies are found in Appendix C.1.

Most work by economists on the political economy of the era studies and emphasizes the importance of commercial and financial interests in opposing or supporting the monarch as well as aligning with different parties in order to secure their trading rights (Acemoglu, Johnson, and Robinson 2005; Jha 2015; Bogart 2018). Jha (2015) finds that MPs with financial interests in overseas trading companies were affiliated with the Court to secure royal favor before rebelling and supporting parliament at the Civil Wars. Bogart (2018) examines how the East India Company supported the Tories from 1690 to 1694, but lost influence with the election of a Whig majority in 1695. Erikson and Hamilton (2018) argue that the merchant and trading interests were not well integrated into the English state, leading them to make public appeals to build support for their commercial policies.

Commercial representation was low in absolute numbers. Only 5% of MPs had been a member of a company at the Restoration, but the share increases and grows over the course of the Cavalier Parliament (1661-1678) reaching a little over 10% (or about 50 MPs) in 1678. Commercial representation falls with the general election leading to the Exclusion Parliament of 1679, but increases during James II's reign. The commercial interest does not immediately increase with the Glorious Revolution, but builds under the Tory administration and plateaus at the end of William's reign and under Whig majority. Representation appears to fall and be closely tied to elections at the end of the period. The dynamics of commercial representation in parliament is similar to that coded by Erickson and Hamilton (2018) for the period 1660 to 1688.¹² The value of the information in Figure C.2 is that we can merge

¹²See their Figure 3. Different from their work, however, I show that commercial representation eventually recovered after the Glorious Revolution and saw overall gains from 1690 to 1702. The discrepancies are the

the individual level data to examine how an MP's company position influence their political support and examine heterogeneity across companies.

MPs holding positions in overseas trading companies had the largest representation in parliament. Changes in their representation are largely associated with general elections, particularly after the general election in 1679 and the general election of 1690. Their steadily growing representation during the Cavalier Parliament could be a result of companies making new appointments to MPs already elected. Domestic companies and local merchant companies had relatively low representation and the evolution is relatively stable over time. Figure C.2 also shows the shares of MPs who held directorship of the Bank of England after its founding by parliament in 1694. While a small share of MPs were personally connected to the Bank of England through the directorship, the timing and growth after 1694 is coincident with the Whig majority parliament and ministry after the general elections in 1694 and 1698. The connections between the financiers and Whig Party have been established and this Figure shows one part of their connection in England's government.

The second type of variable of interest - electoral influence - is coded from their constituency and electoral information. For each MP I use information on the type of constituency the represented (county or borough), how they were elected (in a contested election when more than one candidate ran or), and if they represented a constituency in Middlesex (London, Westminster, or Middlesex county). I also examine the role of parliamentary experience in their political support by coding if an MP had been elected to parliament during the Civil Wars or Commonwealth era (before 1660).

A full list and summary statistics on occupations, election information, and other covariates are found in Panels B and C of Table 3.2. Panel B reports the occupation shares and if they

result of fewer MPs having commercial or trading interests from 1660 to 1688 in my coding. The discrepancy could stem from differences in coding merchant interests. The authors use aggregate information of merchant representation for each parliament compiled across separate volumes by Henning (1983) and Hayton et al. (2002). The volumes use biographical information to classify MPs with trading or commercial interests, which may allow the biographers to identify more commercial interests than my more conservative coding.

changed from 1661-1685 to 1689-1702. Only 10% ever held a position in a company anytime before or while in parliament from 1661 to 1685 and only 4% held a position while elected for the same period. Confirming the patterns in Figure C.2, there was a statistically significant increase to 13% for MPs who ever held a position in a company. Significantly more MPs (41%) had ever held a position in the military anytime before or while in parliament from 1661 to 1685. Military representation, however, dropped to 26% from 1689 to 1702.

Panel C reports summary statistics for different electoral variables, for example if an MP was elected at a by-election, in a contested election, sat in parliament before 1660, represented a borough or a constituency in Middlesex (London, Westminster, and Middlesex). From 1661 to 1685, 13% of all elections were by-elections and thus most MPs were elected at general elections. Fewer elections (10%) were by-elections from 1689 to 1702 which reflects the increasing frequency of general elections after the Glorious Revolution. Consistent with Figure C.1, about 32% of all elections were contested from 1661 to 1685 and this increases slightly to 34% from 1689 to 1702.

Other covariates (birth order and education) are found in Panel D. The share of MPs that were first sons was large and stable for the period. About 55% of MPs were first sons from 1661 to 1685 and 51% were first sons from 1689 to 1702. Most MPs attended either Oxford or Cambridge. A larger and increasing share attended Oxford while a smaller and declining share attended Cambridge. After 1660, Oxford became a center for Anglican and royal support (discussed below).

3.4 Court and Opposition

Results in Table 3.3 show that occupation did lead to different political support for MPs. Using the estimates from Table 3.3, Figure 3.2 reports the predicted share of MPs supporting

the Court and Opposition for each of the occupations compared to MPs who did not have the occupation. The Court disproportionately drew support from the MPs who held positions in the military and those with commercial interests (Panel (a) and (d) of Figure 3.2). In general the results are consistent with Seaward (1988) and Malcolm (1993). The monarchs re-established royal authority over the militia during this era. MPs who held positions in companies may have aligned with the Court in order to protect their trading rights.

The Opposition also drew more support from MPs who held ever held position in a company, however, suggesting that some may have supported a parliamentary regime as protection against the monarch. I provide evidence on heterogeneity across commercial interests below.

While they did not actively support the Opposition, MPs who were professional lawyers or had inherited land were significantly less likely to be affiliated with the Court. They were likely independently wealthy MPs and did not seek patronage from the Court. While positive, it is surprising that the coefficient for MPs who had inherited land is not significant because the Opposition drew support from plain country gentlemen or so-called Country MPs during this period (Henning 1983). There may be measurement error in this variable and could be combined with residential information to more accurately capture "Country" MPs.

In other characteristics, MPs who had attended Oxford were more likely to support the Opposition (Column (2) of Table 3.3). This is somewhat at odds with the historical literature. Oxford was generally considered a stronghold of Cavalier Anglicanism (Aston 1984). It is possible that the MPs who attended Oxford represent more of a Country element, who were more familiar with the Court's lean towards Catholicism.

MPs with commercial interests were likely to be affiliated with both the Court and Opposition. Panel A of Table 3.4 examines if there is heterogeneity across different types of commercial interests in their political support. For example, we may expect to see MPs with

overseas trading companies supporting the Court (Jha 2015; Bogart 2018). MPs who ever held a position in a domestic company or overseas merchant company were more likely to support the Opposition. The correlations provides nuance to the picture of the Opposition as "plain country gentlemen" (Henning 1983).

MPs who held positions in overseas companies, were more likely to support the Court, however. MPs holding positions in overseas companies were more likely to be affiliated with the Court. MPs who ever and overseas trading companies are affiliated with the Court. The patterns are broadly consistent with companies aligning with different political groups to protect their overseas trading rights. For example, Jha (2015) shows that MPs with overseas trading interests were likely to be affiliated with the Court, likely to protect their rights through royal patronage.

Panel B shows that there was heterogeneity within the overseas companies. MPs who held positions in the Royal African Company (called the Royal Adventurers to Africa from 1660 to 1671) were significantly more likely to be members of the Court under Charles II and James II. The company was created by the monarch and London merchant groups at the Restoration and the evidence highlights the connection between the monarch, parliament, and the Royal African Company. MPs currently holding positions in the East India Company, however, were significantly less likely to be affiliated with the Court and no more or less likely to be affiliated with the conflict within the company. It was largely connected to the Charles II and James II, but the connections with the monarch was "a source of controversy within the company" because some of the directors were affiliated with the growing Opposition (Bogart 2018: 13).

Elections

Columns (1) and (2) in Table 3.5 reports estimates for how MPs with different electoral interests supported the Court and Opposition parties. It confirms that elections and electoral interests played a role in generating support for the different groups. First, estimates in

Table 3.5 show that MPs who had been elected before 1660 (during the Civil Wars or Commonwealth era) were more likely to be affiliated with the Opposition and less likely to be affiliated with the Court. The evidence suggests that there was some continuity from the previous rebellion.

Figure 3.3 reports predicted shares from the estimates in Table 3.5. The Opposition appears to have gained support from a broader set of constituents. MPs elected via contest were more likely to be affiliated with the Opposition, while many Court MPs were not elected via election (Panel (a) of Figure 3.3). Figure C.1 shows that, in the absence of any general election, by-elections were increasingly contested from 1661 to 1679. The evidence is consistent with Kishlansky (1986) who argues that the growing importance of contests was an important component of political changes during this era.

MPs who represented counties were more likely to be affiliated with the Opposition (Panel (b)). Counties held the same franchise requirements (40 shilling freehold) which could lead to a broad electorate. Boroughs were also subject to the influence of the monarch or local control from powerful families because their charters could be influenced by the monarch and their franchise requirements (Harris 1993: 19). Patronage was a "dominant force in the process of borough selections [for MPs]" (Kishlansky 1986: 148). Recent work shows that there was heterogeneity across boroughs depending on their autonomy from the monarch depending on their medieval rights which could be important for support during this era as well (Angelucci et al. 2017). MPs representing a growing urban interest and populous constituencies in Middlesex (London, Westminster, and Middlesex) were less likely to be affiliated with the Court but were not more or less likely to be affiliated with the Opposition.

3.4.1 Voting on Exclusion

Did support for different groups translate to support for different policies? I examine how MPs voted on the First Exclusion Bill to provide insight to this question. The results show that party affiliation could also influence support for different policies. The Opposition in parliament took legislative action against the monarchy with the introduction of the first Exclusion Bill in 1679. The bill was introduced in May 1679 and sought to alter the succession of the monarchy. Specifically, it sought to exclude James, Charles II's brother and a Catholic, from inheriting the throne. The bill did not spell out any specific line of succession or other constitutional changes to England's government. It only included provision that James, Duke of York, would not inherit the throne. Charles II killed the bill by suddenly ending the session and dissolving the Parliament. There was a second attempt to pass an Exclusion Bill in the following Parliament but Charles II ended the efforts through the same means as before.

Two lists were drawn up by Roger Morrice - MP and chaplain to two Whigs - in May 1679 that record the MPs who were absent, for, or against the first Exclusion Bill. They were compiled by Browning and Milne (1950). The division on the Exclusion Bill is important not only because it was on a policy (though unsuccessful) that sought to significantly alter England's government but it is also one of the only pieces of information on how MPs voted during this era.

There has been relatively little systematic examination of the determinants of voting on this attempt at drastic change to England's government structure. How MPs voted on Exclusion could capture a variety of political and economic mechanisms. Most historians emphasize how consistent the votes align with previous Court and Opposition lists as well as MPs' religious affiliations (Henning 1983). In the original study of the lists, Browning and Milne (1950) note that support for the bill appears to be geographically concentrated with most

MPs representing the London, the Southwest, and Northern midlands voting for the measure. Most (80%) of MPs who voted for the bill were also re-elected in the following parliament while 55% of those who voted against lost their seats. Many MPs were absent on the vote suggesting deliberate attempts by MPs to avoid the controversy.

How an MP voted could signal his attitude towards constitutional and religious issues as well as the future development of England's government. Voting for exclusion endorsed a significant and novel parliamentary check on the monarchy: the ability to alter the succession of the monarchy via legislative statute. Supporting the bill asserted that parliament and "the people" had the right to decide the monarch. Those who voted against the bill believed the monarchy was a divine right. Voting for Exclusion was also a statement against the current administration under Charles II: he was unable to form policy or raise taxes, managed through courtiers and pensioners, and saw growing opposition in the public sphere (Harris 1997: 205-206).

Panel A of Table 3.2 reports shares of MPs who were for Exclusion (support parliament), against Exclusion (support the monarch), and who were absent on voting for the bill. The bill had support in the House of Commons: 41% of MPs who sat in the Exclusion Parliament voted for the Exclusion Bill. Twenty-four percent of MPs voted against the measure while 32% were absent during the vote.

Tables 3.6 reports estimates for how MPs with different occupations voted for, against, or was absent on the first Exclusion Bill. The results complement those for political support. MPs who had inherited an estate were more likely to support exclusion even though they were no more likely to be affiliated with the Opposition. MPs who held positions in the military supported the monarch by voting against the bill.

The results for commercial interests and voting on exclusion are also consistent the estimate for commercial interests and party support in Table 3.4. While not statistically significant,

the coefficient for MPs who ever held a position in a domestic company is positive for supporting exclusion and the coefficient for MPs holding position in an overseas trading company is positive for voting against exclusion. MPs who ever held positions in merchant companies (e.g. Merchant Adventurers' of Newcastle) were more likely to be absent on the vote. Thus even though some overseas interests were affiliated with both the Opposition (Panel B of Table 3.4) and Court (Panel C of Table 3.4), at the time of Exclusion, MPs were largely against the measure or not willing to go against the monarch. Interestingly, MPs who held mining interests were more likely to support the measure.

Table 3.7 reports estimates of the role of different electoral variables and voting on exclusion. Similar to being affiliated with the Opposition, MPs who had been elected to parliament during the Civil Wars or during the Commonwealth were more likely to vote for exclusion. While MPs who represented constituencies in Middlesex were not more likely to be affiliated with the Opposition, they were significantly more likely to support Exclusion. This evidence is consistent with Browning and Milne (1950) who also emphasize the geographic patterns of voting on the bill. Last, in contrast to their political affiliations, MPs who represented boroughs were not more likely to vote for or against the measure.

3.4.2 Building a Court and an Opposition: Discussion

A large literature emphasizes that the monarchs' attempted to build support in parliament through patronage and borough re-chartering. The large support from MPs with military positions and positions in overseas trading companies is consistent with patronage. There are two additional types of occupations can use the MP dataset to better shed light on these claims. The first, positions in the royal household, is a good measure of the monarch's influence in parliament. The second, local government positions, is more ambiguous. Town and borough charters were issued and renewed by the monarch. A charter provided the

governing framework for the localities, e.g. how governing positions were chosen. For most of Charles II's reign, towns and boroughs petitioned the government for new or to renew their charter. The could also petition to clarify old charters.

The monarchs held rights to assign positions in borough governments with the Corporation Act of 1661. The Corporation Act of 1661 gave power to royal commissioners to settle the composition of the town councils. It enabled the crown to nominate all first aldermen, recorders (judicial officer who recorded local court proceedings), and town clerks as well as future recorders and town clerks and vacant places on common councils (Miller 1985: 58).

Table ?? confirms that MPs who held positions in the royal household were likely to support the Court. MPs who held positions in local governments were no more or less likely to support the Court. This is consistent with historical work arguing that there was no single policy by Charles II to politically influence boroughs through the issuing of new town charters from 1661 to 1664 (Miller 1985).

Historians have noted a difference in strategy and approach towards local boroughs under Charles II's reign and under James II. The strength of the Opposition became evident to Charles II with the Exclusion Crisis leading him to "reassert control [in London and] over officers in other towns via issuing writs of quo warranto [requiring the corporation to present evidence to a royal court they have some right or privilege] [...] against all types of corporate bodies, including trading companies. The primary aim was royal control at the municipal and company levels [and gain advantage at elections]" (Henning 1983). Issuing of the writs led to surrender of the charters and remodeling of parliamentary boroughs.

Figure C.3 reports the share of MPs holding positions in local governments. It shows that there were jumps in the share of MPs with local positions at the end of Charles II's reign (in 1679) and under James II (1685). Table C.1 reports estimates for political party affiliation during the end of Charles II's reign (1679-1681) and under James II (1685). The evidence

suggests that under Charles II, MPs with positions in local governments were more likely to be affiliated with the Court. Under James II they are significantly less likely to be affiliated with the Opposition and more likely to be affiliated with the Court.

This is important because MPs who held positions in local governments were more likely to be absent on the First Exclusion Bill (Table 3.6). The evidence is consistent with the argument that James II continued this strategy of encroachment on localities, which was a key factor leading to the Glorious Revolution of 1688 (Pincus 2009). It is possible that the patterns in absenteeism amongst local officials and those who voted for exclusion (domestic companies) provided the signal to the monarchs' of how to assert royal authority.

In general, the evidence on who supported the Opposition and Court as well as voted for or against Exclusion provides insight to the political economy of the era. First, it is largely consistent with the historical literature that the Court and monarch used patronage and traditionally royal groups to build support. Patronage and re-chartering of local boroughs was an important element of the political economy of the era (Miller 1985; Malcolm 1993; Pincus 2009). MPs who represented boroughs, which could have a more restrictive franchise or be under the influence of local landlords, in general were also supportive of the Court.

Support for the Opposition group is more nuanced. In building support against the monarch and Court, the Opposition relied on MPs who held positions in domestic companies and MPs who had experience the Civil Wars and Commonwealth era. MPs who had succeeded to an estate or held positions in domestic companies were also more likely to support Opposition policies (First Exclusion Bill). The Opposition also used electoral politics to build support. Contests became more common and MPs who were elected via contest were more likely to support the Opposition. MPs who represented counties, which could have lower franchise requirements, were more likely to support the Opposition.

While not directly comparable to recent work by Jha (2015), who examines financial asset

holdings of MPs, the results for commercial interests currently stand in contrast to evidence that overseas commercial and merchant interests were always the most important agents of political and institutional change in England (Acemoglu et al. 2005; Angelucci et al. 2017). It would be interesting to examine the mechanisms put forth by Jha (2015) and Angelucci (et al. 2017) by combining the MP data with financial asset holdings as well as type of constituency representation in determining an MP's political support.

3.5 Political Support after the Glorious Revolution: Tories and Whigs

Did the political affiliations of the Court and Opposition translate to support for the Tory and Whig parties after the Glorious Revolution? The development of the two party system in England was one of the most significant elements of the political economic changes of this era, but the transition from 1660 to 1702 has not been studied. In this section, I present evidence that there was both continuity and change in the connection between the Court and Tories and the Opposition and Whigs. The findings are consistent with the historiography "[the Exclusion Crisis] and the strife between Country [Opposition] and Court [fed into] but did not directly overlap with the [Whig-Tory divide]" (Harris 1993: 147) The evidence supports that there was a new political economic equilibrium after the Glorious Revolution (Pincus 2009; Pincus and Robinson 2014).

Columns (3) and (4) in Table 3.3 reports estimates for the the role of MP occupation in generating support for the Tories and Whigs. The Tories continued to draw support from the military. Different from the Court, the Tories also drew support from lawyers perhaps. This may be because the Tory platform eventually became identified with the Country platform (Harris 1993: 162).

The Tories also drew support from commercial interests, but, consistent with work on the East India Company (Bogart 2018), column (3) in Table 3.4 shows this is largely driven by MPs who held positions in merchant and overseas trading companies (Panels A). It is not insignificant that the East India Company and Royal African Company were not members of or did not support the Whigs (Panel B). Both had maintained the monopoly trading privileges since their inception, using parliament and other strategies to protect their rights (Bogart 2018). The Whig administration was responsible for enacting new trading policies (Pincus 2009). It allowed more competition in the East Indian trade with an Act that allowed a new East India Company in 1697 and also opened up trade to Africa with the Slave Trade Act in 1698 (Pettigrew 2007).

The Tories also drew support from MPs holding positions associated with patronage under Charles II and James II: positions in the royal household and local governments. Columns (3) and (4) show that both were more likely to support the Tory party. The share of MPs holding positions in the monarch's household fell significantly with the general election in 1679 and continued to stay low with parliament's efforts to limit the monarch's influence in parliament after the Glorious Revolution. The results are consistent with the monarch's continued attempt to build support in parliament and that parliament was never fully successful in removing royal patronage during this era (Horwitz 1977). It is possible that the result for local government was a lasting effect of the re-chartering under Charles II and James II.

Whigs saw little overlap with MPs who supported the Opposition. MPs who held positions in the military, for example, supported the Whigs. This may be because William and the Whigs aligned in their efforts to fight the Nine Years' War and the Whigs saw a Court element. In general, Whigs drew support from their base of financiers and large aristocrats, reflected in the fact that only MPs who held directorships in the Bank of England were more likely to be affiliated with the Whigs (Panel B of Table 3.4). Different from the period before the Glorious Revolution, MPs who held positions in domestic merchant companies were no

more or less likely to support the Tories (Panel B).

Columns (3) and (4) of Table 3.3 suggest that electorate also changed after the Glorious Revolution. While contested elections gave the Opposition support under Charles II and James II, they were no more or less likely to favor the Whigs and Tories in aggregate in the Commons. It is also possible that contested elections changed the political party affiliation at the constituent level (Bogart 2016). Figure C.1 shows that the share of contested elections remained stable after the Glorious Revolution. The evidence suggests that as contests became a regular occurrence in political life, both parties adapted to electoral politics and thus no longer favored one party over the other (Kishlansky 1986).

Also different from the previous era, there was a switch in how the different types of constituencies influence an MPs' political support. MPs who represented counties were more likely to support the Opposition before the Glorious Revolution but support the Tories after. Whigs, therefore, gained support from the MPs representing boroughs. It is possible that country support for the Tories represents their base of the landed gentry as well as their more close alignment with the Country divisions. Borough support for the Whigs may be related to their growing association with more traditional Court strong-holds (Harris 1993: 162-163). To fully interpret and compare the results from the previous era, however, one could code different types of boroughs.

Last, constituencies in Middlesex appear to be relatively a-political for most of Charles II's reign but significantly favored the Exclusion Bill. After the Glorious Revolution, the constituencies are aligned with both majority parties. The pattern is consistent with the historical literature. The greater London area was wealthy and populous. The constituencies saw competitive and bitter elections that were not dominated by either the Whigs or the Tories. The election of 1690 in London for example, "saw much controversy as Tories and Whigs continued their struggle for control of the City" (Hayton et al. 2002). Middlesex county, representing the growing suburbs of London, also saw competitiveness in local parties

as well as an active electorate (Hayton et al. 2002).

Discussion

In total the patterns are consistent with a new political economic equilibrium after the Glorious Revolution. Specifically, the period from 1660 to 1685 was characterized by a dominance of the Court faction - supported by military and placement - and influence of the monarch via patronage and re-chartering of boroughs to pack parliament. The Country Opposition during the era gained support from domestic groups and relied on contests and elections to build opposition against the monarch.

The Glorious Revolution not only caused a regime change of the monarchy, but also ushered in institutional changes that altered how support was gained or lost by political groups in parliament. Parliament asserted control over the military during the Convention Parliament of 1689 with the Militia Act and groups in parliament remained opposed to William's attempts to retain a standing army and power during the Nine Years' War. Patronage by the monarch and influence of the Court in parliament was curtailed by several measures. In general they lost support at elections and particularly with the general election of 1679 (see Figure C.4). Consistent with Cox (2012) who argues changes in ministerial accountability was important for public finance with the Glorious Revolution, there were many attempts, and some were successful, to ensure there was a shift towards elections and away from the monarch and Court. There were also attempts to exclude different types of placemen from parliament. Reforms were "introduced on average once every session between 1692 and 1714" (Harris 1993: 163).

The period also saw significant change in electoral institutions as contests became more regular during the late 1670s and elections with the Triennial Act of 1694 (Figure C.1; Table 3.1). Kishlansky (1986) argues: "As elections became more regular so did their procedures. The acceptance of contests as a common occurrence necessitated the transformation of the cumbersome methods of conducting electoral contests" (180-181). This occurred at the local

level to ensure an "equitable resolution" of a contested election by accepting the poll or a public count of votes (Kishlansky 1986: 180-182). Reform to bar placemen and patronage was limited at the national level, but reform to elections did take place with Acts of Parliament in 1696. These aimed to keep prices of elections low and prevent changes to local franchise requirements that would have restricted voting (Harris 1993: 163).

3.6 Concluding Remarks

This paper uses a new individual level dataset to examine the types of Members of Parliament (MPs) that supported the major political groups in parliament from 1660 to 1702. The evidence supports that the late seventeenth century saw a significant transition in English political institutions. It confirmed parliamentary supremacy by shifting power away from the court and monarch and towards a new political economic equilibrium that was supported by changes in electoral institutions. The findings also provide a point of contrast to work studying how commercial, financial, and merchant interests influenced institutional change in England. The evidence for the late seventeenth century suggests that the coalitions were not always centered around merchant or commercial elite but required support from a broader cross-section of the public via elections.

3.7 Figures and Tables

Table 3.1: Parliamentary Meetings: 1660-1702

(I)	(II)	(III)	(IV)	(V)	(VI)	(VII)
years	monarch	sessions	sessions	(average) days	selected events	number of MPs at election
1660	Charles II	Parliament 1660	1	294	Restoration, 1660	547
1661-1679	Charles II	Parliament 1661	18	93	Triennial Act 1664	539
1679	Charles II	Parliament 1679, 1	1	71	Exclusion Crisis, 1679-81	522
1679	Charles II	Parliament 1679, 1	1	79	Exclusion Crisis, 1679-81	541
1681	Charles II	Parliament 1681	1	8	Exclusion Crisis, 1679-81	502
1685	James II	Parliament 1685	1	57	Glorious Revolution, 1688	526
1689-1690	William & Mary	Parliament 1689	2	185	Revolution Settlement	556
1690-1695	William & Mary	Parliament 1690	6	126	Triennial Act 1694	613
1695-1698	William III	Parliament 1695	3	182		548
1698-1701	William III	Parliament 1698	2	135		486
1701	William III	Parliament 1701, 1	1	139	1701 Act of Settlement	486
1701 - 1702	William III	Parliament 1701, 2	1	147		500

Source: Henning (1983), Hayton et al. (2002) and author's calculations from *Journals* and MP dataset. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Table 3.2: Members of Parliament: Political Affiliations, Occupations, and Elections

	1661-1685			1689-1702		
	share	std. dev.		share	std. dev.	diff.
Panel A: Outcomes						
court	0.28	0.45	tory	0.21	0.40	
opposition	0.07	0.26	whig	0.19	0.39	
for exclusion	0.41	0.49				
against exclusion	0.24	0.42				
absent	0.32	0.46				
Panel B: Occupations						
inherited an estate	0.63	0.48		0.64	0.47	0.02*
professional lawyer	0.43	0.49		0.42	0.49	0.01
military	0.41	0.49		0.26	0.43	0.14***
position in company before entering parl.	0.10	0.31		0.13	0.34	0.03***
position in company while in parl.	0.04	0.19		0.04	0.19	0.001
Panel C: Electoral variables						
contest	0.32	0.45		0.34	0.47	0.02*
elected before 1660	0.24	0.42		0.03	0.16	0.21***
borough	0.82	0.38		0.82	0.32	0.001
middlesex constituency	0.02	0.12		0.02	0.12	0.0003
Panel D: Other Covariates						
first son	0.55	0.49		0.51	0.49	0.04***
attended Oxford	0.31	0.46		0.35	0.47	0.03***
attended Cambridge	0.19	0.39		0.16	0.37	0.02***

Notes: Table reports main variables in the analysis and their change over time. *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. Panel A: Outcome of interest is political party support or policy support (for, against, or absent on Exclusion). Panel B: main occupation variables. Panel C: main electoral variables. Panel D: Other covariates (education and birth order) included in the analysis.

Table 3.3: Occupation and Political Support: Multinomial Estimates

	1661-1685		1689	D-1702
	(1)	(2)	$\overline{(3)}$	(4)
	court	opposition	tory	whig
military	0.62***	-0.02	0.49***	0.18**
	(0.05)	(0.08)	(0.08)	(0.09)
company position	0.44***	0.41***	0.31***	0.07
	(0.07)	(0.12)	(0.10)	(0.11)
estate	-0.43***	0.09	0.07	-0.25***
	(0.05)	(0.09)	(0.08)	(0.08)
lawyer	-0.10**	0.00	0.36***	-0.20**
	(0.05)	(0.08)	(0.07)	(0.08)
oxford	-0.10*	0.23***	0.12	-0.33***
	(0.05)	(0.09)	(0.08)	(0.08)
cambridge	-0.06	0.03	-0.20**	-0.26***
	(0.06)	(0.10)	(0.10)	(0.10)
first son	0.19***	-0.07	-0.02	-0.05
	(0.05)	(0.08)	(0.07)	(0.08)
Observations	11,056	11,056	8,044	8,044

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report multinomial estimates relative to baseline of no party affiliation. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

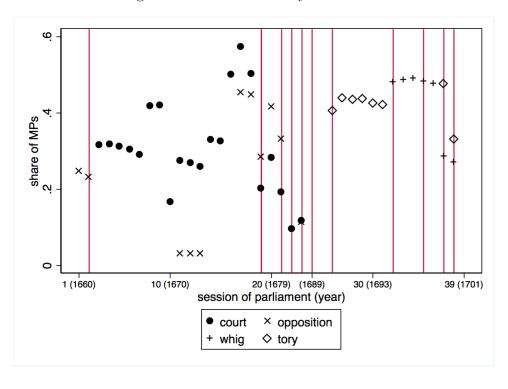
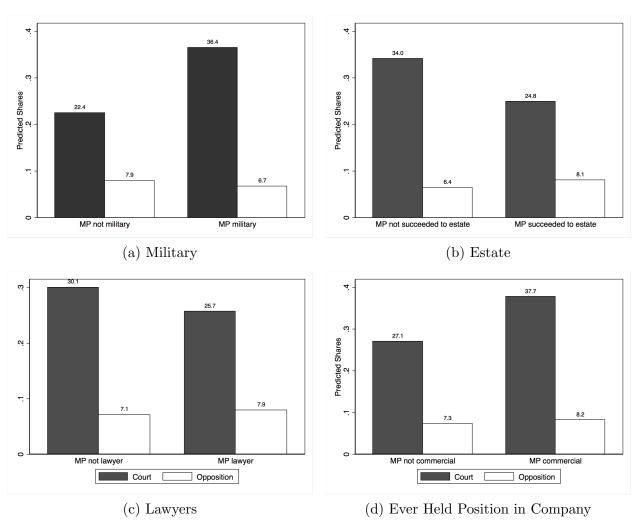


Figure 3.1: Political Party Affiliations

Source: Author's calculations from MP dataset and Bogart (2016).

Notes: Figure shows share of MPs with affiliated with a political party in a session of parliament. Vertical lines mark general elections and new parliaments. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. See text for coding political party.





Notes: Predicted shares of political party support for different occupations from multinomial regression of political party in equation 1.

Table 3.4: Political Support: Heterogeneity Across Commercial Interests

	1661-1685		1689-1702	
	(1) court	(2) opposition	(3) tory	(4) whig
Panel A: ever held position before elected				
domestic company	-0.54***	0.41*	-0.38*	-0.14
	(0.17)	(0.23)	(0.20)	(0.21)
merchant overseas	0.28	0.59*	0.74***	0.29
	(0.23)	(0.31)	(0.24)	(0.27)
overseas	0.32***	0.27	0.49***	-0.10
	(0.11)	(0.18)	(0.13)	(0.15)
mining interest	-0.20	0.16	-0.05	0.30*
	(0.16)	(0.26)	(0.16)	(0.15)
bank of england			-14.18	2.10***
			(521.66)	(0.40)
Panel B: east india and royal africa companies				
east india co. (ever)	-0.67***	-0.20	0.30	-0.50**
,	(0.20)	(0.28)	(0.18)	(0.23)
royal africa co. (ever)	1.07***	0.19	0.58***	-0.27
	(0.13)	(0.25)	(0.16)	(0.21)
east india co. (while elected)	-1.08***	0.16	0.91***	-0.6
,	(0.30)	(0.37)	(0.27)	(0.41)
royal africa co. (while elected)	1.06***	-0.39	-0.13	-2.18***
•	(0.20)	(0.54)	(0.33)	(0.76)

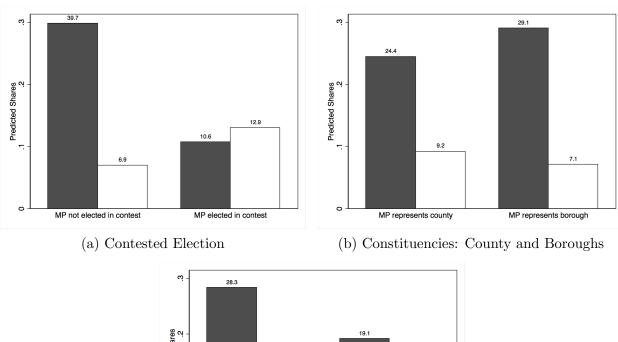
Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report multinomial estimates where the baseline group are MPs with no party affiliation in a session of parliament. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Table 3.5: Elections and Political Support: Multinomial Estimates

	166	1-1685	1689	-1702
	(1) court	(2) opposition	(3) tory	(4) whig
elected before 1660	-0.15***	0.17*	-0.42**	0.45
	(0.06)	(0.09)	(0.19)	(0.30)
contest	-0.41***	1.01***	0.01	-0.01
	(0.12)	(0.13)	(0.10)	(0.09)
borough	0.20***	-0.26***	-0.16*	0.25***
	(0.06)	(0.09)	(0.09)	(0.10)
middlesex	-0.63***	-0.52	1.68***	1.56***
	(0.21)	(0.33)	(0.33)	(0.35)
Observations	11,056	11,056	8,044	8,044

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report multinomial estimates relative to baseline of no party affiliation. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Figure 3.3: Elections and Predicted Political Support: 1660-1685



MP represents non-mdx

MP represents mdx.

Court Opposition

(c) Middlesex Constituencies

Notes: Predicted shares of political party support for different occupations from multinomial regression of political party in equation 1.

Table 3.6: Occupation and Voting on Exclusion

	(1) for exclusion	(2) against exclusion	(3) absent on vote
succeeded to estate	0.10*	-0.13***	0.04
sacceda to estate	(0.05)	(0.04)	(0.05)
military	-0.21***	0.18***	0.04
<i>y</i>	(0.05)	(0.04)	(0.04)
1	0.04	0.40	0.10
domestic company	0.24	-0.10	-0.12
	(0.15)	(0.13)	(0.15)
overseas company	-0.01	0.10	-0.09
	(0.10)	(0.09)	(0.10)
merchant	-0.42**	-0.01	0.46**
	(0.21)	(0.18)	(0.20)
mining	0.27*	-0.21	-0.05
	(0.16)	(0.14)	(0.15)
royal household	-0.14	0.17**	-0.03
v	(0.09)	(0.08)	(0.09)
local position	-0.16***	0.03	0.11*
1	(0.06)	(0.05)	(0.06)
Constant	0.07	0.23	0.45^{*}
	(0.23)	(0.20)	(0.23)
Observations	503	503	503
R-squared	0.12	0.10	0.05
lawyer			
education	yes	yes	yes
	yes	yes	yes
electoral	yes	yes	yes

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report OLS estimates. Outcomes are indicators if MP voted for excluding James II from becoming monarch (column 1), against the measure (column 2), or was absent on the measure (column 3).

Table 3.7: Elections and Voting on Exclusion

	(1) for exclusion	(2) against exclusion	(3) absent on vote
elected before 1660	0.16**	-0.08	-0.08
	(0.07)	(0.06)	(0.07)
contest	0.15	-0.44	0.30
	(0.39)	(0.34)	(0.38)
middlesex	0.37**	-0.26*	-0.10
	(0.18)	(0.16)	(0.18)
borough	-0.01	-0.01	0.04
	(0.06)	(0.05)	(0.05)
Constant	0.07	0.23	0.45*
	(0.23)	(0.20)	(0.23)
Observations	503	503	503
R-squared	0.12	0.10	0.05
lawyer	yes	yes	yes
education	yes	yes	yes
company	yes	yes	yes
military	yes	yes	yes
estate	yes	yes	yes

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report OLS estimates. Outcomes are indicators if MP voted for excluding James II from becoming monarch (column 1), against the measure (column 2), or was absent on the measure (column 3).

Bibliography

- Acemoglu, Daron, Simon Johnson, and James Robinson. 2005a. "Institutions as a Fundamental Cause of Long-Run Growth." in *Handbook of Economic Growth, Volume 1A* eds. P. Aghion and S.N. Durlauf.
- Acemoglu, Daron, Simon Johnson, and James Robinson. 2005b. "The Rise of Europe: Atlantic Trade, Institutional Change, and Economic Growth." 95: 546-579.
- Allen, Robert C. 1988. "The Price of Freehold Land and the Interest Rate in the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries." *Economic History Review* 41: 33-50.
- Angelucci, Charles, Simone Meraglia, and Nico Voigtlaender. 2017. "The Medieval Roots of Inclusive Institutions: From the Norman Conquest of England to the Great Reform Act." NBER Working Paper No. 23606.
- Anon. 1974. Remembrances: or, a compleat collection of the standing orders of the House of Lords in England.
- Aryeety, Ernest and Christopher Udry. 2010. "Creating Property Rights: Land Banks in Ghana." American Economic Review: Papers and Proceedings 100: 130-134.
- Aston, Trevor Henry. 1984. The History of the University of Oxford. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Baron, David. 1994. "Electoral Competition with Informed and Uninformed Voters." The American Political Science Review 88: 33-47.
- Beckett, J.V. 1984. "The Pattern of Landownership in England and Wales, 1660-1880." *The Economic History Review* 37: 1-22.
- Besley, Timothy and Maitreesh Ghatak. 2010. "Property Rights and Economic Development" in *Handbook of Development Economics*. eds. Dani Rodrik and Mark Rosenzweig.
- Besley, Timothy and Torsten Persson. 2011. Pillars of Prosperity: The Political Economics

- of Development Clusters Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Bogart, Dan. 2018. "Party connections, interest groups, and the slow diffusion of infrastructure: Evidence from Britains first transport revolution." *The Economic Journal.* 128: 541575.
- Bogart, Dan. 2018. "The East Indian Monopoly and the Transition from Limited Access in England, 1600-1813." in *Organizations, Civil Society, and the Roots of Development*, eds Naomi R. Lamoreaux and John J. Wallis.
- Bogart, Dan. 2016. "Political Party Representation and Electoral Politics in England and Wales, 1690-1747." Social Science History. 40: 271-303.
- Bogart, Dan. 2011. "Did the Glorious Revolution Contribute to the Transport Revolution? Evidence from Investment in Roads and Rivers." *Economic History Review* 64: 1073-1112.
- Bogart, Dan and Gary Richardson. 2011. "Property Rights and Parliament in Industrializing Britain." *Journal of Law and Economics* 54: 241-274.
- Bogart, Dan and Gary Richardson. 2010. "Estate Acts, 1660-1830: A New Source for British History." Research in Economic History 27: 1-50.
- Bogart, Dan and Gary Richardson. 2009. "Making property productive: reorganizing rights to real and equitable estates in Britain, 1660-1830." European Review of Economic History 13: 3-30.
- Bonfield, Lloyd. 1983. Marriage Settlements, 1601-1740: The Adoption of the Strict Settlement. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Bond, Maurice. 1964. "Estate Acts of Parliament." History 49: 325-328.
- Broadberry, Stephen and John Joseph Wallis. 2017. "Growing, Shrinking, and Long Run Economic Performance: Historical Perspectives on Economic Development." NBER Working Paper No. 23343.
- Braddick, Michael J. 1996. The Nerves of State: Taxation and the Financing of the English State, 1558-1714. Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Browning, Andrew and Doreen Milne. 1950. "An Exclusion Bill Division List" Bulletin of the Institute of Historical Research 23: 207-225.
- Chandaman, C.D. 1975. *The English Public Revenue*, 1660-1688. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Clark, Gregory. 1996. "The Political Foundations of Modern Economic Growth: England, 1540-1800." Journal of Interdisciplinary History 26: 563-588.

- Coase, R.H. 1974. "The Lighthouse in Economics, *Journal of Law and Economics* 17: 357-76.
- Coffman, D'Maris, Adrian Leonard, and Larry Neal. 2013. Questioning credible commitment: Perspectives on the rise of financial capitalism. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Cox, Gary. 2012. "Was the Glorious Revolution a Watershed?" *Journal of Economic History* 72: 567-600.
- Cox, Gary. 2016. Marketing Sovereign Promises: Monopoly Brokerage and the Growth of the English State. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- De Soto, Hernando. 2000. The Mystery of Capital: Why Capitalism Triumphs in the West and Fails Everywhere Else. New York: Basic Books.
- Demsetz, Harold. 1967. "Toward a Theory of Property Rights." The American Economic Review 57: 347-359.
- Dimitruk, Kara. Forthcoming. "Intend therefore to Prorogue': The Effects of Political Conflict the Glorious Revolution in Parliament, 1660-1702." European Review of Economic History.
- Dincecco, Mark. 2011. Political Transformations and Public Finances: Europe, 1650-1913. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Doolittle, Ian. 2015. "Property law and practice in seventeenth-century London." *Urban History* 42: 204-224.
- Dudley, Christopher. 2013. "Party Politics, political economy, and economic development in early eighteenth-century Britain." *Economic History Review* 66: 1084-1100.
- Ellis, Charles Thomas. 1799. The Solicitor's Instructor in Parliament Concerning Estate and Enclosure Bills.
- English, Barbara and John Saville. 1983. Strict Settlement: A Guide for Historians. The University of Hull.
- Epstein, Stephan. 2000. Freedom and Growth: The Rise of States and Markets in Europe, 1300-1750. London: Routledge.
- Erickson, Amy Louise. 1993. Women and Property in Early Modern England. New York: Routledge.
- Erikson, Emily and Mark Hamilton. 2018. "Companies and the Rise of Economic Thought: The Institutional Foundations of Early Economics in England, 1550-1720." American Journal of Sociology. 124: 111-149.

- Jha, Saumitra. 2015. "Financial Asset Holdings and Political Attitudes: Evidence from Revolutionary England." *The Quarterly Journal of Economics*. 103: 1485-1545.
- Funk, Kellen and Lincoln A. Mullen. 2018. "The Spine of American Law: Digital Text Analysis and U.S. Legal Practice." *American Historical Review* 123: 132-164.
- Glaeser, Edward L. and Andrei Shleifer. 2002. "Legal Origins." The Quarterly Journal of Economics 117: 1193-1229.
- Gore, Paul A. 2000. "Cluster Analysis" in *Handbook of Applied Mulitvariate Statistics and Mathematical Modeling* eds. Howard E.A. Tinsley and Steven D. Brown.
- Guinnane, Timothy W., Ron Harris, and Naomi R. Lamoreaux. 2017. "Contractual Freedom and Corporate Governance in Britain in the Late Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Centuries." Business History Review 91: 227-277.
- Habakkuk, H.J. 1965. "Landowners and the Civil War." *The Economic History Review* 5: 130-151.
- Habakkuk, H.J. 1979. "Presidential Address: The Rise and Fall of English Landed Families, 1600-1800." Transactions of the Royal Historical Society 29: 187-207.
- Habakkuk, H.J. 1994. Marriage, Debt, and the Estates System. Oxford University Press.
- Harris, Tim. 1993. Politics Under the Later Stuarts: Party Conflict in a Divided Society. Longman.
- Harris, Tim. 1997. "What's New about the Restoration?" Albion: A Quarterly Journal Concerned with British Studies. 29: 187-222.
- Hayton, D., E. Cruickshanks, and S. Handley (eds.). 2002. The House of Commons: 1690-1715. Boydell and Brewer.
- Henning, B.D. (ed). 1983. The House of Commons: 1660-1690. Boydell and Brewer.
- Hodgson, Geoffrey. 2015. Conceptualizing Capitalism: Institutions, Evolution, Future. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Hodgson, Geoffrey. 2017. "1688 and all that: property rights, the Glorious Revolution and the rise of British capitalism." *Journal of Institutional Economics* 13: 1-29.
- Holiday, P.G. 1970. "Land Sales and Repurchases in Yorkshire after the Civil Wars, 1650-1670." Northern History 5: 67-92.
- Hoppit, Julian. 1996. "Patterns of Parliamentary Legislation, 1660-1800." The Historical Journal 39: 109-131.

- Hoppit, Julian. 1997. Failed Legislation, 1660-1800: Extracted from the Commons and Lords Journals. London: Hambledon Press.
- Hoppit, Julian. 2003. "The Landed Interest and the National Interest, 1660-1800." in *Parliaments, Nations and Identities in Britain and Ireland, 1660-1850* ed. Hoppit, J. Manchester University Press: Manchester.
- Hoppit, Julian. 2011. "Compulsion, Compensation and Property Rights in Britain, 1688-1833." Past and Present 210: 93-128.
- Horwitz, Henry. 1977. Parliament, Policy, and Politics in the Reign of William III. Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Johnson, Noel D. and Mark Koyama. 2014. "Tax farming and the origins of state capacity in England and France." Explorations in Economic History 41: 1-20.
- Johnson, Noel D. and Mark Koyama. 2017. "States and economic growth: Capacity and constraints." Explorations in Economic History. 64: 1-20.
- Jones, G.F. Trevallyn. 1964. "The Composition and Leadership of the Presbyterian Party in the Convention." *The English Historical Review.* 79: 332-47.
- Kelly, Morgan and Cormac Ó Gráda. 2016. "Adam Smith, Watch Prices, and the Industrial Revolution." The Quarterly Journal of Economics 131: 1727-1752.
- Kemp, Betty. 1971. Votes and Standing Orders of the House of Commons: The Beginnings London: H.M. Stationery Off.
- Kishlansky, Mark A. 1986. *Parliamentary Selection*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Klerman, Daniel. Forthcoming. "Quantitative Legal History" in Oxford Handbook of Historical Legal Research.
- Lamoreaux, Naomi. 2011. "The Mystery of Property Rights: A U.S. Perspective. *The Journal of Economic History* 71: 275-306.
- Libecap, Gary D. and Dean Lueck. 2011. "The Demarcation of Land and the Role of Coordinating Property Institutions, *Journal of Political Economy* 119: 426-467.
- Malcolm, Joyce Lee. 1992. "Charles II and the Reconstruction of Royal Power." *The Historical Journal.* 35: 307-330.
- McCahill, Michael. 2013. "Estate Acts of Parliament, 1740-1800." Parliamentary History 32: 148-168.
- McCloskey, D.N. 1972. "The Enclosure of Open Fields: Preface to a Study of Its Impact

- on the Efficiency of English Agriculture in the Eighteenth Century." *The Journal of Economic History* 32: 15-35.
- Miller, John. 1985. "The Crown and the Borough Charters in the Reign of Charles II" *The English Historical Review.* 100: 53-84.
- Mokyr, Joel, and John V. C. Nye. 2007. "Distributional Coalitions, the Industrial Revolution, and the Origins of Economic Growth in Britain." Southern Economic Journal 24: 50-70.
- Murrell, Peter. 2017. "Design and Evolution in Institutional Development: The Insignificance of the English Bill of Rights." *Journal of Comparative Economics* 45: 36-55.
- North, Douglass C., John Joseph Wallis, and Barry R. Weingast. 2009. Violence and Social Orders: A Conceptual Framework for Interpreting Recorded Human History. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- North, Douglass and Barry Weingast. 1989. "Constitutions and Commitment: The Evolution of Institutions Governing Public Choice in Seventeenth-Century Britain." The Journal of Economic History 49: 803-32.
- O'Brien, Patrick K. 2011. "The nature and historical evolution of an exceptional fiscal state and its possible significance for the precocious commercialization and industrialization of the British economy from Cromwell to Nelson." *Economics History Review.* 64 (2): 408446.
- Ogg, David. 1962. England in the Reign of Charles II. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Ogilvie, Sheilaigh and A.W. Carus. 2014. "Institutions and Economic Growth in Historical Perspective: Part 1." CESifo Working Paper No. 4861.
- Palsson, Craig. 2016. "Breaking from Colonial Institutions: Haiti's Idle Land, 1928-1950." working paper.
- Pincus, Steven. 2009. 1688: The First Modern Revolution. Yale: Yale University Press.
- Pincus, Steven C. A. and James A. Robinson. 2014. "What Really Happened During the Glorious Revolution?" *Institutions, Property Rights, and Economic Growth: The Legacy of Douglass North.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Pettigrew, William. 2007. "Free to Enslave: Politics and the Escalation of Britain's Transatlantic Slave Trade, 1688-1714." The William and Mary Quarterly 64: 3-38.
- Priest, Claire. 2006. "Creating an American Property Law: Alienability and Its Limits in American History." *Harvard Law Review* 120: 385-459.
- Priest, Claire. 2015. "The End of Entail: Information, Institutions, and Slavery in the

- American Revolutionary Period." Law and History Review 33: 277-319.
- Randall, James G. 1916. "The Frequency and Duration of Parliaments." *The American Political Science Review* 10: 654-682.
- Roberts, Clayton. 1993. "The Growth of Political Stability Reconsidered." Albion: A Quarterly Journal Concerned with British Studies 25: 237-256.
- Rosenthal, Jean-Laurent. 1990. "The Development of Irrigation in Provence, 1700-1860." The Journal of Economic History 50: 615-38.
- Seaward, Paul. 1988. The Cavalier Parliament and the Reconstruction of the Old Regime, 1661-1667. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Smith, David L. 1999. The Stuart Parliaments, 1603-1689. London: Arnold.
- Stasavage, David. 2007. "Partisan politics and public debt: The importance of the 'Whig Supremacy' for Britain's financial revolution." European Review of Economic History 2: 123-153.
- Sussman, Nathan and Yishay Yafeh. 2006. "Institutional Reforms, Financial Development and Sovereign Debt: Britain 1690-1790." The Journal of Economic History 66: 1-30.
- Spring, Eileen. 1964. "The Settlement of Land in Nineteenth-Century England." The American Journal of Legal History 8: 209-223.
- Tennyson, Robert. 2013. "From Unanimity to Proportionality: Assent Standards and the Parliamentary Enclosure Movement." Law and History Review 31: 199-231.
- Thirsk, Joan. 1952. "The Sales of Royalist Land During the Interregnum." *The Economic History Review* 5: 188-207.
- Thompson, F.M.L. 1966. "The Social Distribution of Landed Property in England since the Sixteenth Century." *The Economic History Review* 19: 505-517.
- Wallis, Patrick, Justin Colson, and David Chilosi. 2018. "Structural change and economic growth in the British economy before the Industrial Revolution, 1500-1800." The Journal of Economic History ISSN 1471-6372.
- Wells, John and Douglas Willis. 2000. "Revolution, Restoration, and Debt Repudiation: The Jacobite Threat to England's Institutions and Economic Growth." The Journal of Economic History 60: 418-441.
- William, O. Cyprian. 1948. The Historical Development of Private Bill Procedure and Standing Orders in the House of Commons.

Appendix A

Appendix: Chapter 1

A.1 Data Appendix

A.1.1 Estate Bills: Sources and Coding

I compiled the population of bills from a dataset of failed bills (Hoppit 1997) and a dataset of estate acts (Bogart and Richardson 2010). I then used the *Journals of the House of Commons* and *Journals of the House of Lords* to collect entries for each bill in the legislative process. The final dataset includes information on bill characteristics, such as bill type and landholder type, and information on each bill's legislative life-cycle.

I coded information from a bill's first entry. For example, a bill was read for the first time in the House of Lords on February 22, 1677 with the title: "An Act to enable the Sale of certain Lands in Winterborne Whitechurch in the County of Dorsett, lately belonging to Lawrence Squib Esquire, deceased." ¹

I used a bill's first entry in the legislative process to code the property holders and types of bills. To identify the interests on bills, a keyword search was conducted for the specific

¹'House of Lords Journal Volume 13: 22 February 1677', in *Journal of the House of Lords*: Volume 13, 1675-1681 (London, 1767-1830): 49-51. British History Online http://www.british-history.ac.uk/lords-jrnl/vol13/pp49-51 [accessed January 2017].

titles. General categories were then aggregated from this coding. The coding is not mutually exclusive.

Landholders

- Nobility The nobility consists of dukes, marquesses, lords, countesses, duchesses, earls, viscounts, barons, and ladies (nobility). Lord was a common way to refer to a member of the peerage. As such, some entries refer to a single person with multiple titles. For example, a bill naming a Lord and Baron was for "restoring [land] to Charles Lord Gerrard, Baron of Brandon." In this event, I coded the individual by the more specific title. In the previous example, Baron. Some individuals had titles Marquis and Earls. These individuals are infrequent; as such they are coded as separate titles, but I include a dummy for multiple titles. A Lady could refer to a woman in the nobility or the gentry. This was inferred if she was also referred to as a Dame, a title given to a woman in the gentry, or if the bill named her in relationship to a gentry man or a noble man. For example, a bill in 1670 named the "Lord Viscount of Stafford and the Lady Mary his Wife." Thus, Lady Mary is a member of the nobility.
- Gentry Individuals titled sir, knight, dame, baronet, ladies (gentry), esquires, or gentleman fall into the landed gentry. The distinction of a Lady was inferred from other information in the first reading (e.g. if her husband was named; if a woman was referred to a Dame and a Lady, the bill is coded as having a 'Dame.') Some individuals are referred to as Sir only, Sir Knight, Sir Baronet, or Sir Knight and Baronet. Because these cases are more numerous I code them separately.
- Without Rank The third category, those with no rank, contains untitled individuals, professionals, individuals addressed as 'Mrs.' or 'Mr.' While 'Mr.' can also refer to someone as "Master" indicative of legal training, or as a type landholder. An argument can be made for including 'Mr.' as a gentry, but the reasoning is to distinguish between those given the title of esquire and Mr., perhaps due to subtleties in norms. Some bills refer to the same person as a 'Mr.' and as an Esquire. These are coded as 'esquire' only. Some individuals did not have their own title but were "daughter of" or "son of" a titled individual. These individuals were **not** classified as untitled. Individuals without rank were identified as Mrs., Mr., untitled, and a single yeoman.
- Other interests Other interests includes individuals who were not a part of the social and political ranking system but interests were important in English society. These are government officials (serjeants at law, clerks and aldermen), military (colonels and captains), copyholders, creditors, infants, and Royalty, and professionals. Professionals are doctors, merchants, ironmonger and scrivener. Copyholder held ancient rights and also held special legal status.

Bill Types

 $^{^2}$ 'House of Lords Journal Volume 12: 7 November 1670', in Journal of the House of Lords: Volume 12, 1666-1675 (London, 1767-1830): 358-359.

- Non-estate "Event" bills that were introduced because of questions of landowner-ship created by the Civil Wars and Glorious Revolution. Some landowners needed clarification after the Restoration of the monarchy in 1660 because of a series of land confiscations and fines that were carried out during the Civil Wars, Commonwealth, and in Ireland after 1688.
- Estate bills Estate bills as classified by Bogart and Richardson (2010) and Hoppit (1996).
- Sale bills I first coded bills for selling land and then treated all other bills as "other." This could be recorded as a bill to sell, a bill to allow trustees to sell, a bill for the sale of, etc.
- Other Non-sale bills.
 - Lease Bills to allow leases.
 - Raise money Unspecified transaction that allows a property holder to raise money for one of the purposes listed below. From the text of the acts, these could be sell, mortgage, or lease.
 - Complete contract Confirm a transaction, previous act, or rectify a mistake in a settlement.
 - Settlement Allow landholders to make a settlement or alter a previous one.

• Purposes

- Debts Unclear nature from title or first reading from text.
- Jointures Payments or to legally provide for widows (jointures).
- Equal or more value Allows a landholder to purchase land of equal or more value
- Portions For payments for younger children (often daughters and younger sons) or other types of family members.
- Improvement Improving the land. Coded if first reading says improvement, improved, or improving. E.g. "rendering the improved Rent."

Petitions

The Journals record if a petition or counsel were heard on a bill. To code bills with petitions, I conducted a keyword search for "petition" on the legislative life-cycle data. I also conducted a keyword search for "counsel" to code which bills had legal counsel called in. About 14% of all estate bills had at least one petition regarding its content. As a type of constituent service legislation, theory predicts that estate bills in general should generate little influence activity, like lobbying (Baron 1994). This could be an understatement because petitions by family members or other interested parties could be reported in committee but not recorded in the Journals.

A.1.2 Estate Bills: Summary Information

Table A.1 provides information on social ranks and house of origin for estate bills.

Panel A of Table A.1 shows most bills named a member of the gentry (570/954=60%) with esquires, like Lawrence Squib above, named the most often. Approximately the same number of bills entered the House of Commons and House of Lords (Panel B of Table A.1). This was before a series of standing orders made the House of Lords the single house of origin. Bills that entered the House of Lords were also more successful, potential evidence of selection by landholders' ranking into the two Houses or better organization in the House of Lords, which had fewer members.³ It could also be that bills introduced in House of Lords represent better quality bills or more connected and powerful families. There was also selection into different Houses by social rankings. A greater share of bills naming the nobility and clergy entered the Lords more while a greater share of bills naming members of gentry and no rank entered the Commons more.

A.1.3 Legislative Life-cycle Data

Parliament faced a problem when passing estate bills because it did not have a preset or fixed amount of time to work. The monarch decided when to end a session, which was, in theory, unknown. Landholders, their lawyers and agents worked with MPs and peers to decide if and when to introduce estate bills as well as when to work on estate bills to pass a multi-layered process. This process is summarized in Figure 1.5. The process required attention and approval by both Houses of Parliament and had to receive the royal assent by the monarch before becoming an Act of Parliament. Estate bills could be introduced in either house, but the process was similar. Bills were approved by a committee where amendments could be made and the whole house. After the legislature's approval, a bill

 $^{^{3}}$ Hoppit (1997).

received the royal assent from the monarch and became an act. The monarch could also withhold the royal assent and veto an estate bill, which was only done 4 times during this era.

A.1.4 Political Variables: Coding

Conflict Variables

- SP (Sudden Prorogation): Ogg (1962) gives a summary of the events in each session under Charles II from 1665 to 1681. Horwitz (1977) does the same from 1688 to 1702. Both include information on the main issues in each session as well as the proximate reasons why and how the monarch ended each session with a brief description of the prorogation event. I used James II's speeches recorded in the Journals of the House of Lords and Smith (1999) for the session meeting during his reign. The dataset is available from the author.
- ConflictRevenue & ConflictMonarch coded from Ogg (1962), Horwitz (1977) and Smith (1999).
- IndirectRevenue From the European State Finance Database provided by Professor P. K. O'Brien and Mr. P. A. Hunt.

Political Variables

- ConflictHouses Conflict between the two Houses of Parliament, often over general legislation or constitutional court cases, could cause congestion of or deliberate blocking of estate bills. Coded from Ogg (1962) and Horwitz (1977).
- WarSession sessions meeting during war years could have made parliament more effective or less effective depending on the support for the specific war effort. A near majority of sessions met while England was at war (40%). The influence of war on estate bill success could be positive or negative and also correlate with the monarch's decision to end a session. For example, the need for resources could influence the monarch's decision to keep a session open longer, giving parliament more time to legislate on estate bills.
- Days time parliament had to legislate is a main alternative factor hypothesized to influence estate bill success. I include days a session met as a proxy for time parliament had to legislate. I thank Dan Bogart for kindly sharing this data with me.
- *PoliticalParty* a categorical variable for the majority party of parliament. From 1660 to 1689: Opposition or Court; from 1689 to 1702: Tory or Whig.
- DeficitRatio changes in England's fiscal capacity could also account for changes in its legislative functioning. Improving fiscal prudence could also improve parliament's

organization or administration and thus parliament's organizational capacity to pass estate bills.⁴ I use the government deficit ratio from Dincecco (2011) to proxy for changes in state and fiscal capacity. It will account for changes in parliament's fiscal prudence and also capture relative improvements in its ability to collect revenues. The deficit ratio series is measured at yearly intervals rather than by session of parliament. To account for the discrepancy, I used the corresponding year observation for sessions of parliament meeting only once during a single year. I took the simple average of the yearly data for sessions of parliament spanning multiple years.

Royal Assent

There were 38 sessions of parliament from 1660 to 1702. The distribution of this activity under the four monarchs is insightful. Columns (1) and (2) show that the 8 sessions that were prorogued without a supply or public measure occurred under Charles II and James II. Columns (1) and (3) support Hoppit (1996) on the changes on parliamentary meetings. Parliament had more time to legislate after the Glorious Revolution. It shows that sessions under Charles II and James II were shorter, meeting for about 77 days, than under William and Mary and William III, meeting for about 148 days.

While parliament had more time to legislate after the Glorious Revolution, it still faced the problem of not knowing how to allocate its time because it did not know when the session would end. Columns (4)-(7) provide more detail on how the time was used. Column (4) shows that there was differences in how often the monarch's came to parliament to pass estate, supply, and public bills. Charles II and James II came to parliament about once a session to pass estate bills, while after the Glorious Revolution the monarchs came to pass estate bills more often to also receive supply or public bills. Under all monarchs, parliament always had estate bills ready for approval when the monarch came to parliament for supply or public bills (columns (6) and (7)). The evidence suggests that changes on this dimension of crown-parliament politics with the Glorious Revolution was important for parliament's functioning.

⁴See Chandaman, C.D., *The English Public Revenue*, 1660-1688 and Johnson, Noel D. and Mark Koyama. 2014. "Tax farming and the origins of state capacity in England and France." *Explorations in Economic History* 41: 1-20.

A.2 Structural Break Tests

The historical literature and evidence in Figure 1.1 shows a significant shift in the success rate of estate bills after 1688. Further analysis using structural break tests also allows to recover additional information on changes in the parliamentary system during this era.⁵ Figures A.2 and A.3 the OLS-based CUSUM process has a trough around sessions 23 to 24 (after the Glorious Revolution of 1688). The tests using F statistics show similar evidence (supF test at 5% level).

Given there is evidence of at least one structural break, I use the the dynamic programming algorithm developed by Bai and Perron (2003) to date structural changes. The BIC shows that the model has 2 breakpoints. In addition to 1688, there is also a structural change the parliamentary system from 1671 to 1673. This occurred after the first year Charles II did not call parliament and suddenly ended 87% of sessions for the rest of his reign. The historiography shows this was the beginning of when parliament and the monarch began open conflict over religious policy: "Hitherto 1671 Charles had yielded in order to obtain supplies but even thus the supplies were insufficient to enable him to pay his creditors; and there was now a prospect that parliament would force him to sacrifice not Dissenters, but the Papists, in return for such inadequate grants" (Ogg 1962: 351).

⁵Bai, Jushan and Pierre Perron. 1998. "Estimating and Testing Linear Models with Multiple Structural Changes." *Econometrica* 66 (1998): 47-78 and Zeilies et al. 2003. "Testing and dating of structural changes in practice." *Computational Statistics & Data Analysis* 44: 109-123.

A.3 Appendix Figures and Tables

Total

Table A.1: Summary Information on Social Ranks and House of Origin

Panel A: Social Rank				
	Total	% of Total		
Nobility	206	0.22	-	
Gentry	574	0.6		
No Rank	204	0.19		
Clergy	37	0.04		
Other	198	0.22		
Panel B: House of Origin	1			
	Failed	Act	% of Total	
House of Commons	202	261	0.48	•
House of Lords	120	371	0.52	
Panel C: Selection into I	House By Soci	al Rank		
	Commons	Lords	difference	p-value
Nobility	0.12	0.30	0.18	[0.00]***
Gentry	0.68	0.52	-0.15	[0.00]***
No Rank	0.24	0.18	-0.07	[0.01]**
Clergy	0.02	0.06	0.04	[0.00]***
Other	0.22	0.19	-0.03	[0.20]

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Panel A: Number of bills naming families from different social ranks. These are not mutually exclusive categories. Panel B: Bill failure and success (approved by House of Commons, House of Lords, and monarch) by House of Origin. Panel C: Differences in shares of bills introduced in House of Commons and House of Lords by social rank. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1.

491

463

Table A.2: Reason for Failure, Session 15 (13 October 1675 - 22 November 1675)

name	origin	stage failed	date	reason failed	future Act? - session passed	months to pass
Robinson's Estate	С	H1 - comm	13/11/1675	still active - in comm	no	
Barkley's Estate	C	H1 - comm	13/11/1675	still active - in comm	yes - 16	17.6
Henry Marchant's Estate	С	H1 - comm	16/11/1675	still active - in comm	no	
Squib, Laurence, Estate	L	H1 - report/recommitted	17/11/1675	still active - re-comm	yes - 16	17.3
Lord Kilmorey's Estate	С	H1 to H2	19/11/1675	still active	yes - 16	23.7
Lord Cullen's Estate	С	H1 - 1st R	19/11/1675	still active	yes - 16	28.4
Plater's Estate	$^{\rm C}$	H1 - 1st R	20/11/1675	still active	yes - 16	32.2
Lord Maynard's Estate	L	H2 - comm	20/11/1675	still active - in comm	yes - 16	22.9
-			. ,		session average	1

Source: Estate bill dataset and Journals.

Notes: Reason failed is as recorded in the *Journals*. Future Act records if bill became an Act of Parliament in a later session and the specific session it was passed. Sessions are numbered from the first session with restoration of the monarchy.

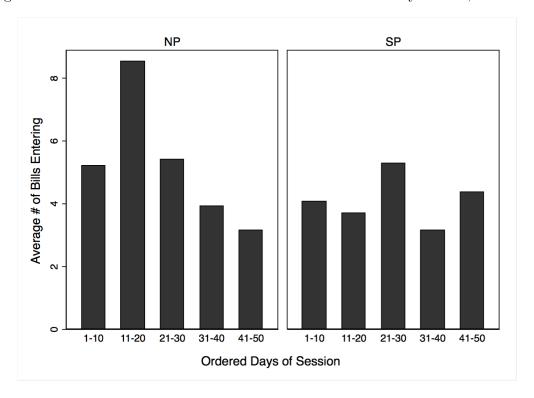
Table A.3: Reason for Failure, Session 33 (20 October 1696 - 16 April 1697)

name	origin	stage failed	date	reason failed	future Act?	months to pass
Courtney's Estate	С	H1 - comm	14/1/1697	pet to comm	no	
Stopford's Estates	$^{\mathrm{C}}$	H1 - 3rd R	16/2/1697	pass neg	no	
Knott's Estate	L	$\mathrm{H}2$ - 2nd R	27/2/1697	pet & rejected	yes - 34	13
Cock's Estate	L	$\mathrm{H}2$ - 1st R	11/3/1697	still active	no	
Warburton's Estate	L	$\mathrm{H}2$ - 3rd R	1/4/1697	pass neg	no	
Moyle's Estate	L	H2 - comm	12/4/1697	still active - in comm	no	
Lord Fairfax's Estate	$^{\mathrm{C}}$	$\mathrm{H}2$ - $2\mathrm{nd}\ \mathrm{R}$	13/4/1697	counsel to full house	no	
					session average	1.6

Source: Estate bill dataset and Journals.

Notes: Reason failed is as recorded in the *Journals*. Future Act records if bill became an Act of Parliament in a later session and the specific session it was passed. Sessions are numbered from the first session with restoration of the monarchy.

Figure A.1: Bills Not Introduced Earlier in Sessions Suddenly Closed, 1660-1685



Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset and *Journals*. Figure compares the average number of bills introduced in the first 50 days of a session (10-day increments) in sessions that were suddenly closed and those that were not. NP: normally closed (prorogued) sessions. SP: suddenly closed (prorogued) sessions.

Table A.4: Anticipation: Average Speed of Passage by Stage in Legislative Life-cycle, 1660-1685

		Avg.	# of days	
	NP	SP	difference	p-value
days from stage 1 to 2	11.03	39.4	28.4	[0.34]
	(1.81)	(32.89)		
days from stage 2 to 3	22.4	16.1	-6.32	[0.38]
	(4.93)	(4.98)		
days from stage 3 to 4	7.38	8.91	1.53	[0.68]
	(1.2)	(3.9)		
days from stage 4 to 5	2.34	0.48	-1.8	[0.09]*
	(0.85)	(0.15)		
days from stage 5 to 6	5.9	4.8	-1.07	[0.75]
	(1.69)	(3.15)		
days from stage 6 to 7	4.49	8.22	3.72	[0.34]
	(0.95)	(4.42)		
days from stage 7 to 8	9.12	8.13	0.98	[0.80]
	(1.57)	(4.07)		
days from stage 8 to 9	6.99	2.21	-4.77	[0.01]**
	(1.04)	(1.22)		
days from stage 9 to 10	13.64	6.32	-7.31	[0.08]*
avg. speed (slope)	28.22	43.72	15.51	[0.14]
	(7.41)	(7.12)		. ,

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Slope: last date - first date. Means for each stage calculated at session-level first. NP: normally closed (prorogued) sessions. SP: suddenly closed (prorogued) sessions.

Table A.5: Differences in Observables By Sudden Closure (Prorogation), 1660-1685

	S	hares of	bills introdu	uced
	NP	SP	difference	p-value
Nobility	0.28	0.27	0.006	[0.88]
	(0.01)	(0.04)		
Gentry	0.57	0.54	0.03	[0.55]
	(0.03)	(0.04)		
No Rank	0.21	0.16	0.05	[0.25]
	(0.02)	(0.03)		
Clergy	0.04	0.02	0.01	[0.46]
	(0.01)	(0.01)		
Other	0.2	0.19	0.009	[0.83]
	(0.02)	(0.04)		
Estate	0.79	0.95	0.16	[0.00]***
	(0.02)	(0.02)		
enter HoL	0.41	0.42	0.01	[0.80]
	(0.03)	(0.05)		
Total Bills	321	117		

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. NP: sessions that were normally closed (prorogued). SP: sessions that were suddenly closed (prorogued) by monarch.

Table A.6: Royal Assent: Estate Bills and Supply

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5) given RA	(6) on estate bill	(7)
	sessions	prorogue & RA supply, public	avg # days per session	avg. # RA days, per session	# days RA, estate	# days RA, supply & estate	# days RA public & estate
Charles II	23	16	96.9	1.2	27	19	7
James II	1	1	57	2	2	2	0
William & Mary	7	7	135.7	4	28	24	4
William III	8	8	159.6	3.27	27	22	4

Notes: Author's coding from the Journals of the House of Lords. RA: Royal Assent, days when monarch (or royal commission) gave assent to bills (bills became Acts of Parliament). The types of legislation were identified from the Journals because there were different phrases of approval from Norman French that were used for three types of legislation. For supply bills: La Roy [or Reine] remercie ses bons Subjects [or Clergy], accepte leur Benevolence, et ainsi le veult; private bills: Soit fait come il est desiré. public bills: La Roy [or Reine] le veult; private bills: Soit fait come il est desiré.

Table A.7: Reason for Failure

		Probit					STO		
	pos. reject	pos. reject reject comm.	reject, pet., counsel	pos. reject	pos. reject reject comm.	reject, pet., counsel	share share share pos. reject	share reject, comm.	share pet. counsel
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(9)	(7)	(8)	(6)
SP	-0.10*	-0.03	-0.11	-0.10	-0.04	-0.11*	-0.19**	-0.01	-0.15*
	(0.06)	(0.07)	(0.07)	(0.00)	(0.08)	(0.06)	(0.09)	(0.11)	(0.08)
observations	321	321	321	321	321	321	34	34	34
standard errors	ı	ı	1	cluster	cluster	cluster	1	1	ı
LR test	81.68	50.28	74.31		I	I	1	ı	1
pseudo-R2 or R2	0.22	0.11	0.17	0.22	0.14	0.2	0.5	0.18	0.5
type	18.45	15.56	18.52	4.59	8.07	99.9		1	ı
	[0.42]	[0.62]	[0.42]	[0.00]	[0.00]	[0.00]			
landowner	20.53	19.6	26.47	14.46	9.72	13.75	1	1	1
	[0.42]	[0.48]	[0.15]	[0.00]	[0.00]	[0.00]			

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors clustered at session of parliament (34 clusters). Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME). SP: indicator for sessions suddenly closed by monarch. Outcomes: pos. reject (positive reject): Journals record parliament rejected bill; reject comm. (rejected in committee): bill failed in committee; reject, pet., counsel: bill last recorded in Journals with a rejection, petition, or counsel.

Table A.8: Economic Effects of Sudden Prorogation

Panel A: Scarring of F	Projects If entered				
~	NP	SP	difference	p-value	n
% success of bills	0.66	0.32	-0.34	[0.00]***	954
	(0.04)	(0.08)			
% success, if	0.77	0.63	-0.14	[0.00]***	833
first entry	(0.04)	(0.01)			
Panel B: Delay of Pro	jects If entered				
	NP	SP	difference	p-value	
years	0.32	0.89	0.57	[0.00]***	
	(0.02)	(0.21)			
months	4	11			
Panel C: Displacement	t of New Projects				
-	v	# ne	w bills		
	neg binomial			pois	sson
SP_{t-1}	-0.63**	-1.43*	_	-0.63***	-1.43***
	(0.25)	(0.77)		(0.08)	(0.38)
SP_{t-2}		0.84			0.84*
		(0.78)			(0.38)
			OLS		
	share new bill			log share	new bill
SP_{t-1}	-0.085	0.02	-	-0.17***	-0.03
	(0.06)	(0.19)		(0.04)	(0.12)
SP_{t-2}		-0.11			-0.15
		(0.19)			(0.12)
	n=33				

Notes: Author's calculations from estate bill dataset. Standard errors in parentheses. *** p < 0.01, *** p < 0.05, * p < 0.1. Projects defined as a bill with same name (first and last) and legal type. NP: sessions that were normally closed (prorogued). SP: sessions that were suddenly closed (prorogued) by monarch. Panel A: If a project was first introduced in a session that was suddenly closed, it had a lower longer term success rate. Panel B: If a project was first introduced in a session that was suddenly prorogued, it took longer to pass. Panel C: Sessions meeting after those that were suddenly prorogued had fewer new bills.

Table A.9: Political Conflict and Sudden Prorogation: Correlations

Panel A: Charles II	and	James	II		
	n	SP	ConflictRevenue	ConflictMonarch	${\bf Indirect Revenue}$
SP	12	1			
ConflictRevenue	5	0.5	1		
ConflictMonarch	7	0.44	-0.35	1	
IndirectRevenue		0.62	0.17	0.38	1
sessions	23				
Panel B: William &	Mar	y and V	William III		
	n	SP	ConflictRevenue	ConflictMonarch	IndirectRevenue
SP	3	1			
ConflictRevenue	4	0.82	1		
ConflictMonarch	1	-0.13	0.44	1	
IndirectRevenue		-0.55	-0.27	0.40	1
sessions	15				

Notes: Author's calculations from political dataset. See Appendix Section A.1.4. There were 38 sessions; 34 had at least one estate bill introduced. SP: sessions that were suddenly closed (prorogued) by the monarch. ConflictRevenue: sessions with conflict between parliament and monarch over fiscal issues (tax bills). ConflictMonarch: sessions with conflict between monarch and parliament over general policy (legislation). IndirectRevenue: monarch's financial independence from parliament.

Table A.10: Estimates of Success by Social Rank

	Outcor	ne: Success Prol	`	Act of Par	liament) OLS
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Nobility	-0.13**	-0.10**	-0.05	-0.04	-0.11
	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.10)
Gentry	-0.07	-0.06	-0.02	-0.02	-0.11
N. D. J	(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.09)
NoRank	-0.16***	-0.13***	-0.10**	-0.10**	-0.28**
CI	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.04)	(0.11)
Clergy	0.10	0.03	-0.01	-0.03	0.01
0.1	(0.08)	(0.08)	(0.08)	(0.08)	(0.19)
Other	0.00	-0.00	0.00	-0.00	0.02
11000*NT 1:1:1	(0.04)	(0.03)	(0.03)	(0.03)	(0.05)
post1688*Nobility				0.07	0.11
+1C00*C+				(0.09)	(0.11)
post1688*Gentry				0.01	0.08
+1 COO*N - D l-				$(0.08) \\ 0.17$	(0.10) $0.25*$
post1688*NoRank					
post1688*Clergy				(0.09) -0.08	(0.13) -0.08
post 1000 Ciergy				(0.15)	(0.21)
post1688*Other				-0.04	(0.21) -0.05
post 1000. Other				(0.07)	(0.06)
Constant				(0.07)	25.64**
Constant					(12.12)
					,
observations	954	954	954	954	954
pseudo R^2 or R^2	0.01	0.13	0.22	0.23	0.23
LR test	14.24	158.9	275.1	288.63	-
political variables	no	yes	yes	yes	yes
bill types	no	no	yes	yes	yes
NoRank difference				0.13	0.22
p-value				[0.72]	[0.64]
F				[~]	[]

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Clustered at session of parliament (34 sessions). Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME).

Table A.11: Esquires and Gentlemen More Likely to Enter Commons after Glorious Revolution

]	Outco 1660-168		Naming Es	quire or Ge 1689-1702	
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
enter HoL	-0.05	0.04	0.06	-0.17***	-0.15***	-0.13***
	(0.04)	(0.04)	(0.05)	(0.05)	(0.04)	(0.04)
Observations pseudo- R^2 or R^2	438	438	438	516	516	516
	0.04	0.23	0.25	0.04	0.31	0.33
politics	no	no	yes	no	no	yes
property holder	no	yes	yes	no	yes	yes

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Outcome is one if bill names an esquire or gentlemen and zero otherwise. Enter HoL is an indicator if bill was introduced into House of Lords (HoL). Reported probit coefficients are average marginal effects (AME).

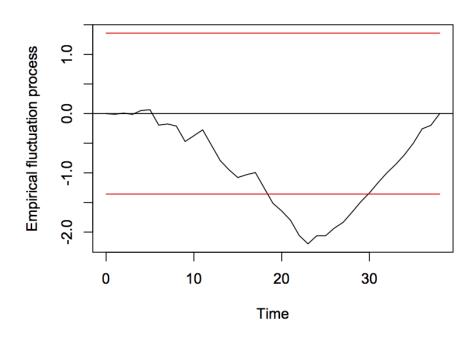
Table A.12: Timing of Improvement in Bill Entry

Panel A: Timing		ment in Num 1)	ber of Bills	and Acts in Ses	sions of Parliamer (2)	nt	(:	(3)		
	1679-1685	1689-1690	diff.	1675-1685	1689-1690	diff.	1675-1685	1689-1692	diff.	
Number of bills	8.6	15.6	7 [0.05]*	16.5	15.6	0.83 [0.93]	16.5	25	8.5 [0.38]	
Number of acts	2	10.6	8.6 [0.01]**	7.5	10.6	3.1 [0.64]	7.5	18.4	11 [0.15]	
Total Sessions‡	3	3	. ,	6	3	. ,	6	5	. ,	
Number of bills	6.5	15.6	9.1 [0.04]**	11	15.6	4.6 [0.61]	11	25	14 [0.11]	
Number of acts	1.5	10.6	9.1 [0.00]***	5	10.6	5.6 [0.33]	5	18.4	13.4 [0.04]**	
Total Sessions	4	3		9	3		9	5	. ,	

Notes: Table reports information on when participation improved after the Glorious Revolution (1688). \ddagger : conditional on estate bills introduced in a session. *** p <0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Panel A: Reports differences in means for all bills and acts at three different time intervals or bandwidths before and after 1688. Panel B: Reports differences in means for shares of bills naming the two groups of the gentry: baronets and knights and esquires and gentlemen at three different time intervals or bandwidths before and after 1688.

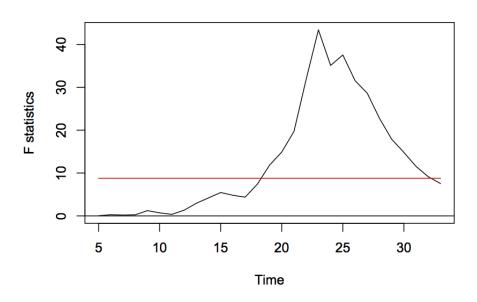
Figure A.2: Structural Break: OLS-CUSUM

OLS-based CUSUM test



Notes: See text.

Figure A.3: Structural Break: F-stats



Notes: See text.

Appendix B

Appendix: Chapter 2

B.1 Data Appendix

B.1.1 Coding Economic and Legal Functions

Estate acts during this era can generally be divided into two parts: (1) a set of "preamble" clauses and (2) a set of "enactment" clauses. The preamble describes or re-writes any contracts or conveyances on a set of lands or property. These clauses are separated by the use of "Whereas." From this section I identify a primary property conveyance and a section where the landholder appeals to parliament for an act. The appeal section describes a family's economic condition, the legal constraint, and the proposal for a reorganization. The enactment section sets out a series of clauses that address the appeals and the underlying conveyance. The enactment clauses are separated by the use of "Be it therefore Enacted." I include provisos in the enactment clauses. Individual clauses of each act were entered into a separate column in a spread sheet. On average acts have 3 (min 1, max 8) preamble clauses and 3 (min 1, max 11) enactment clauses.

Asterisks (*) denote types of clauses that can usually be found in the descriptive titles of acts.

Preamble Clauses: Conveyances and Appeals

Conveyances

From the preamble section I identify a primary conveyance for each act: life estate-entail settlement, strict settlement, religious corporation, or other conveyance. Acts can describe more than one contract or conveyance on a property. If a settlement is listed, this is the primary conveyance. For the remaining acts, land is held by a religious corporation, or the conveyance is a different type of contract.

- life estate-entail settlement: follows Bonfield (1983). Life estate-entail model: conveyance lists life estate followed by an entail (specifically cites "entail", "in taile" or variation thereof). Possible that settlement created a trust for a family charge, e.g. for jointure or portions.
- strict settlement: Follows Bonfield (1983). Settlement describes life estate and specifically that there is a "trust to preserve contingent remainders."
- religious corporation: for this random sample, land held by the Church of England (Bishop of London).
- other conveyance: previous estate act, decree of Chancery, will (not creating a settlement), common recovery, mortgage, (1) previous partition, and (1) award for a dukedom.

Appeals

From the preamble section, I identify an appeal section. The appeal section begins with a shift from describing contracts and conveyances to problems or events and ends before a petition to the monarch and the enactment clauses. Some acts' preamble and appeal section are the same. Some acts describe additional conveyances within the appeal section. Some acts contain further "appeals" after the initial set of enactments. These "secondary" appeals are followed by a "secondary" set of enactments. For simplicity I treat these secondary appeals as a part of the initial appeal section and their enactments as a part of the initial enactment section. In the dataset they are coded with one asterisk (*) if it is the first set

"secondary appeal and enactment" and two asterisks (**) if it is the second set of second set of "secondary appeal and enactment."

An act is coded as "having an appeal of the type" or not (some acts contain multiple clauses falling into a single category).

<u>Economic events or concerns</u>- not mutually exclusive Landholder(s) appeals...

- incomplete or outstanding transaction that previous or current conveyance or transaction has been made but that it is incomplete or outstanding. The appeal refers to a specific conveyance, agreement, or purchaser. Conveyances or transactions: contracts or conveyances for sale, wills, loans, marriage settlements, partition, common recovery, building contract. For example: sales: "purchase moneyes are still deteyend" or "purchase money not paid"; loan: "cannot hand a loyall discharge nor can the said Sir William Juxon in any loyall way obtaine from them satisfaction of the said moneyes"; marriage settlements: "cannot be perfectly and speedily settled according to the said Agreement"; will (to pay portions): "who is Desirous to performe the said Decree Relating to the satisfieing his said Brothers and Sisters portions."
- opportunity for economic improvement that there is an opportunity to **build**, **improve** property for the advantage or benefit of family members. Acts that describe that have opportunity to sell land or "conceive" that they would like to sell land without specifying for payment of debts, family charges or purchasing land.
- costs of debt cites interest payments are greater than rental income, the debts are "great" or "considerable," or that creditors have brought forth an action of ejectment or on the property (2).
- management cost that the property, buildings, or land is ruinous, decayed, managed at great cost, inconvenient to manage.
- marriage there is an opportunity for marriage of a family member.
- unforeseen circumstance, accident, and war there was an unforeseen circumstance, accident. Circumstances include a life tenant's sudden death (2), an executor or life tenant has run away (2), the London fire of 1666 (1), there was an unintended consequence because the family "did not know" about specifics of their estate or settlement (4). Civil Wars play a role in economic or legal appeal. For Civil War, the appeal use the phrases war (wiarr), the late (unhappy) troubles, the late times of usurpation, or cite fines or delinquency.

Legal constraints - not mutually exclusive

Landholder(s) appeals...

• heir under 21 - that "by reason of the minority of the said issues male [heirs, male]" or

that the heir is under 21 or an infant. Land had become vested in the remaindermen or entail.

- life tenant or executor of will is barred that there is no one with the powers or right to carry out the proposal or that the life tenant or executor of a will is somehow prevented from carrying out the transaction.
- trust legal issue with trust: trustees are concerned with liability, do not have powers, or want to be excused or added to trust.
- protect from claims claims can still be made by heirs or other family members with an estate; land or property is still liable to existing estates or claims
- general law appeal cites they will be in violation of a general law or are constrained because there is a previous act of parliament (which can only be amended by parliament)

Proposed reorganization - not mutually exclusive

- *pay debts to pay debts either generic or to complete a credit transaction.
- *pay family charges to pay family charges (portions, jointures, life annuities, legacies).
- *purchase land of higher value to purchase land of higher value or replace land in settlement.

Enactment Clauses

There are three types of enactment clauses: economic, legal, and amend settlement. The three categories are not mutually exclusive: a single clause can contain information that is classified as economic, legal, and amend settlement. An act is coded as "having a clause of the type" or not. Some acts have multiple clauses falling into a single category, but it is coded as a binary variable.

Economic transactions - not mutually exclusive

The enactment clause...

- *sale allows a life tenant or trust to sell land.
- *lease allows a life tenant or trust to make leases.
- *mortgage allows a life tenant or trust to mortgage property.
- *settlement allows family to make a settlement, either life estate-entail model or strict settlement.
- *other allows for unique transactions. Specifically, clauses for: restoring a duke to his estates at the Restoration, exchanging land, purchasing land for Bishop of London, giving power to pay bonds and obligations, enclosing land, and securing payment of a loan.

Legal - not mutually exclusive

The enactment clause...

- good at law specifies that an economic transaction will be good at law either by (1) protecting the transaction from claims by potential claimants (remaindermen or family members with estates on the property) or by specifying that the transaction was made (2) "as if" the life tenant held the property in fee simple or was over 21.
- *confirm confirms a contract, conveyance, or transaction (e.g. will, a sale, settlement) or amends a previous act of parliament.
- title or rights transfers a title to another part (either person or trust); addresses the rights of tenants or other third party stakeholders.
- limits on act or transaction either (1) contains the phrase "as if the Act had not been made" in regards to the economic transaction, (2) specifies some other condition on the transaction (e.g. time limit to when it can take place), (2) specifies some other unique stipulation (e.g. paid in Chancery or subject to government renewal).
- amend trust or trustees alters or clarifies powers of the trust. Examples: liability, adds new trustee.

<u>Amend settlement</u> - not mutually exclusive The enactment clause...

- discharge or void discharges land from a trust or voids a transaction.
- amend or make new family charges adds a new charge (e.g. a jointure) or alters an existing charge.
- protect existing charges specifies an existing charge or estate on the land, usually associated with a person's name, and the phrase "as if the Act had not been made."

B.1.2 Geography, Property Values, and Petitioners

Geography and Acreage

The location of the land or property can be found in either the (1) preamble section or (2) in the enactment clauses which record or describe the property of the landholders. I first enter the property listed in the enactment section - those to be sold, leased, mortgaged, settled, or in question. All acts refer to some property in the enactment section. It either gives a full list of the property or it provides a summary and refers to lands or property "as aforesaid" or as "recited [in the] Indenture mentioned and comprised" in the preamble section. If it lists the property as aforesaid, I enter the property from the preamble section in a new column.

Acreage is recorded in about 30% of acts. Most settled land in acts was less than 500 acres. It thus appears that acts were not in general for large estates. Spring (1967), in studying the settlement practices of aristocrats, documents that one aristocratic family had settled land totaling over 180,000 acres in 1767, another held 30,000 acres as tenant for life in 1780, and a last family had approximately 140,000 acres of settled property. This evidence, however, may be reflecting the "drift towards great estates" of the eighteenth century (Thompson 1966; Habakkuk 1994). Thompson (1966) estimates that 4.5 million acres was distributed among 200 "great landowning families" in 1641. If we assume half of this land was settled or entailed, then on average great landowners had 11,250 acres of settled land that was possibly under the purview of estate acts. If acts addressed only a fraction of a great landholders' settled property, between 1% and 30%, then we would expect to see acts listing between 12 and 3,375 acres of land. There are is only one act that is close to the upper bound: an act passed in 1688 for a large landholder, the Earl of Peterborough, to confirm a common recovery for 3,500 acres in Bedfordshire.

Property Values

Property values were coded from the preamble and the enactment clauses. I calculate the annual rental income of the property that landholders wanted to sell, lease, or mortgage. Some acts record a sales price or a purchase price. Others list charges on the estate (debts, portions, or jointures) or what the proceeds of a sale will be used for. I first look for purchase or sales prices in the enactment section or appeal section. I then look for a charge the proceeds of a sale is used for - e.g. sale land to pay portions of "x" pounds. Last I expand the search to look for information on any charge on the estate. The charges listed are usually for portions or jointures, but also legacies from a will, life annuities, or stipends to trustees or executors. If a purchase price is listed, I use the amount to calculate the rental

¹The estates of the Percies, Dukes of Northumberland in Northumberland and Middlesex (pp. 216-217).

²Land in Durham and Northumberland of the Lambtons, who were future Earls of Durham (pp. 219-220).

³The Fitzwilliams, earls of Fitzwilliam whose estates in West Riding of Yorkshire and estates in Ireland were settled (pp. 219-220).

⁴Earl of Peterborough's Estate Act, 1 W&M s1, c. 37.

value. If there is a single charge and no purchase price, I use the amount to calculate the rental value. If there are multiple charges, I sum all charges and use the amount to calculate the rental value. Coding value in this way is likely to serve as a lower bound for the rental income of the estates or property of the landholders.

The values are either recorded as lump sums or in terms of the annual rental income. I use all information on the charges and sales price to calculate the annual rental income for the property in question. The coding captures the value of the property released for transactions. I enter all charges in separate columns. I sum all transactions and divide the total value by 25 to get an estimate of the annual rental income. This follows from the practice of multiplying prices by 25 as a common conversion tool to calculate annual rental income.

Costs of an Estate Bill

The total cost includes parliamentary fees that were recorded in the *Journals* in 1700. It also includes information on solicitors' fees for writing and preparing the petition and appeal for an act, fees for consultation (with interested parties, MPs, and judges), and fees for amending the estate bill throughout the parliamentary process.⁵ To take instructions for the bill it cost 13 s. 4 d., to meet with an MP to manage the bill - 15 l. 5 s., and for any subsequent "attendance" or meeting with the MP - 13 s. 4 d. Drawing an abstract of the deeds and petition for a bill cost 4 l. 17 s. total. The total fee for the House of Lords was 70 l. and 5 s.; the total fee for the House of Commons was 28 l. and 14 s.

The cost of 392 l. 14 s. 8 d. for an act from 1799 is likely to be an overestimate of the total cost of investing in an act from 1660 to 1702 for at least two reasons. First, the bill of costs

⁵It is an itemized set of costs that was taxed by a Master of Chancery in "pursuance of a clause" in the resulting Act of Parliament. The manual by Ellis also includes a Schedule of Parliamentary Fees (Rate of the List of Fees) that were first recorded in 1700. The schedule of fees was officially sanctioned by a standing order in 1731 to "be printed, and hung up in the Speaker's Chambers, in the Lobby, and in the Clerk's Office in Parliament." The standing order may have been in response to MPs charging fees of their own because the standing order also specifies "[t]hat if any Officer or Servant of this House shall presume to demand or take any greater Fee than what shall be contained in the said printed Tables, this House will proceed against such Officer or Servant with the utmost Severity" quoted in Ellis (1799), pg. 93.

includes fees to go to judges before a bill could be introduced into parliament, as required by standing order of 1702. Bills introduced from 1660 to 1702 did not have to go to judges. Excluding all potential "judges' fees" decreases the costs to 336 l. 19 s. 4 d. Excluding all fees charged prior to going to the Houses of Parliament decreases the costs to 223 l. 4 s. 8 d. Second, it is likely to be an over estimate of the costs to obtain an act because it was for the Duke of Buckingham, who may have been able to pay or would have paid a premium for a solicitor. Therefore a reasonable range of costs for an estate act from 1660 to 1702 is £100-200.

Contemporary evidence suggests this may be a reasonable approximation of the costs of an act for the late seventeenth century. In a letter from a Middlesex MP to his nephew, Oliver Le Neve, on 5 Dec, 1696, Ralph Hawtrey, recommends two solicitors and counsel for Le Neve's private bill and notes that "the fees must be paid before the second reading." Hawtrey also notes the importance of consulting with counsel: "[Mr. Walker] is best seen at 9 a.m., at the Parliament Office in Old Palace Yard, before he goes to the House."

Types of Property Holders

Petitioners

For each act I identify a petitioner or set of petitioners. This usually found in the preamble section: either at the beginning of the section or at the end of the section before the enactment section. It is usually found with the phrase "at the humble petition" or describes the "petitioners or supplyants [suppliants]." If no petition clause is found, I code the names of parties in the appeal section as the petitioners for the act.

Most acts (60%) have at least one petitioner who is an untitled gentry. The nobility petitioned for 20% of acts and a titled gentry petitioned on 31% of acts. Professionals petitioned on 8% of acts. They find that the number of "professionals, merchants, and other property

⁶Calendar of Correspondence and Documents Relating to the Family of Oliver Le Neve, of Witchingham, Norfolk, 1675-1743.

owners" petitioning parliament or named in descriptive titles is 21.4% (McCahill 2013) and 17.8% (Bogart and Richardson 2010).⁷ Members of the clergy, whose land was held by religious corporations and also subject to legal constraints, petitioned on 3 acts (5%). The clergy members during this period held large tracts of land: 2 were for the Bishop of London and 1 was for the Archbishop of Canterbury.

Nearly half of acts name at least one petitioner who is or was a Member of Parliament (MP) or is related to an MP. This may be an understatement of MP involvement because it does not match male or female petitioners who are related to MPs through the maternal line, cousins, etc. I also have not coded trustees who were MPs. Fifty percent is also significantly higher than the late eighteenth century where 12% of bills (50/428) had an MP "elected from the ranks of the upper gentry." That many MPs used estate acts during this era is not surprising for several reasons. First, parliament was a majority landholders or wealth holders who were familiar with and used settlements. The evidence also suggests that merchants and MPs with more commercial interests used the conveyance. Second, it is likely this period had different political barriers than the later system of estate acts that was regulated by a set of standing orders and required petitions be sent to two judges first.

Trustees

Acts either empower life tenants or vest the property in a trust to carry out an economic transaction. I read each enactment clause and identified the trustees by the phrase: "to bee settled and vested in the [names of trustees] upon trust [or in trust]."

Thirty-seven acts named 122 trustees to carry out an economic transaction (on average 3 trustees per act, max=7, min=2). About 50% of trustees were members of the lower gentry (esquires and gentlemen). The second two largest groups were the titled gentry (22% of trustees) and professionals (15% of trustees). The nobility were less represented as trustees

⁷Table 4 in McCahill (2013).

⁸McCahill (2013), pg. 153.

than as petitioners (11% of trustees). I also code if the trustee was "of London" or "of an Inn of Court" (trained in law). Of the esquires and gentlemen trustees, 30% were from the London area and 8% were lawyers.

Social class of Petitioners and Trustees

- nobility the petitioner has a title (e.g. duke, earl, lord, duchess, countess, viscount, viscountess)
- upper gentry petitioner is a baronet, knight, dame
- lower gentry petitioner is an esquire or gentlemen
- professional petitioner is a merchant, creditor, ironmonger, alderman, goldsmith, apothecary, woolen draper, citizen, clothworker, doctor in phisick, haberdasher

Members of Parliament

I use the History of Parliament website (http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/research/members/) to identify if a petitioner was a Member of Parliament (MP). For both male and female petitioners, I search the database for a common last name. I use information in an MP's "Family and Background", his biography, and his residence to confirm if the petitioner is an MP or related to an MP.

5 MPs with annual income in biography

- 1. FAUNT, George (d.1697), of Foston, Leics.
 - petitioner
 - £2,000 per annum The income of 2,000 p.a. with which he was credited in the Leicestershire list for the projected order of the Royal Oak was probably exaggerated.
 - http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/faunt-george-1697
- 2. OKEOVER, Rowland (1651-1730), of Okeover, Staffs.
 - petitioner
 - £800 per annum His income was estimated at 800 p.a., but may have been further reduced by the private Act of 1662 which enabled him to sell land in Derbyshire for payment of debts.

- http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/okeover-rowland-1651-1730
- 3. HILDYARD, Henry (1610-74), of Winestead, Yorks. and East Horsley, Surr.
 - father of petitioner Phillip Hildeyard
 - £2,357 per annum His estate was valued at 2,357 p.a.
 - \bullet http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/hildyard-henry-1610-74
- 4. GODOLPHIN, William (1635-96), of Spargor, St. Mabyn, Cornw.
 - brother of petitioners
 - £3,200 per annum But these represented only a quarter of his wealth, estimated at 80,000 (sum).
 - http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/godolphin-william-1635-96
- 5. BAMPFYLDE, Sir Coplestone, 2nd Bt. (c.1633-92), of Poltimore, Devon.
 - brother or uncle of petitioner
 - £1,900 per annum He had earned nomination as knight of the Royal Oak, for which his estate was reckoned at 1,900 p.a. (1660-61)
 - \bullet http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1660-1690/member/bampfyldesir-coplestone-1633-92

Matching Acts to Land Transactions

I match 30% of acts to secondary sources of family or county histories that records transactions. I first searched the Victoria County Histories (available at British History Online). For properties in London, I also searched the Survey of London (available at British History Online). I then searched information from an MP's biography. Last I conducted a general internet search for records in topographical studies of counties or parishes and family histories.

Main Sources

1. Victoria County Histories - "Founded in 1899 and originally dedicated to Queen Victoria, the Victoria County History (VCH) is an encyclopaedic record of England's places and people from earliest times to the present day. It has been described as the greatest publishing project in English local history."

- Available at: http://www.british-history.ac.uk/catalogue/secondary-texts
- 2. Survey of London "The Survey of London, founded in the 1890s, is the nearest thing there is to an official history of London's buildings. This series provides detailed architectural and topographical studies of the capital's built environment."
 - Available at: http://www.british-history.ac.uk/search/series/survey-london
- 3. MP Biographies A database that "contains the 21,420 articles published so far by the History of Parliament covering the careers of Members of Parliament."
 - $\bullet \ \ Available \ at: \ http://www.historyofparliamenton line.org/research/members$

Other Sources - topographical histories and other records.

- 1. Magna Britannia "A topographical and historical account of a number of British counties, published by the antiquary Daniel Lysons (1762-1834) and his brother Samuel (bap. 1763, d. 1819). It covers the counties of Bedfordshire, Berkshire, Buckinghamshire, Cambridgeshire, Cheshire, Cornwall, Cumberland, Derbyshire, and Devon."
 - Available at: http://www.british-history.ac.uk/search/series/magna-britannia
- 2. The Environs of London "A topographical account of parishes within 12 miles of London, written by the antiquary Daniel Lysons (1762-1834). The publication was dedicated to author and politician Horace Walpole."
 - Available at: http://www.british-history.ac.uk/search/series/london-environs
- 3. London, Past and Present: Its History, Associations, and Traditions topographical account of London by Henry Benjamin Wheatley (1891).
 - Available through google books
- 4. A Survey of the Cities of London and Westminster, Borough of Southwark, and Parts Adjacent ..., Being an Improvement of Mr. Stow's, and Other Surveys, by Adding Whatever Alterations Have Happened in the Said Cities, &c. to the Present Year topographical account of London by John Stow (1733).
 - Available through google books.
- 5. Norfolk, Topographical History "A topographical history of the county of Norfolk by historian and Church of England clergyman Francis Blomefield (1705-52)."
 - Available at: http://www.british-history.ac.uk/search/series/topographical-hist-norfolk

B.1.3 Random Sample of Estate Acts of Parliament

Title, archives reference number, year passed (session of parliament)

1660

- 1. An Act for restoring of the Marquess of Hertford to the Dukedom of Somerset, HL/PO/PB/1/1660/12C2n24, 1660 (1)
- An Act for enabling of John Newton the Younger and William Oakely to make Sale of Lands for Payment of Debts and raising Portions, HL/PO/PB/1/1660/12C2n68, 1660 (1)
- 3. An Act enabling George Faunt of Foston, in the County of Leicester, Esquire, to sell and convey Part of his Lands for Payment of several Debts and Legacies charged upon his Estate by Sir William Faunt, Knight, deceased, and for the raising of Portion for his younger Children, and making his wife a Jointure, HL/PO/PB/1/1660/12C2n69, 1660 (1)

1661

- 4. An Act for confirming a Sale made by Sir Thomas Prestwich and others, of the Manor of Holm, and certain Lands in the Parish of Manchester in the County of Lancaster, unto Sir Edward Mosley, Baronet,
 - HL/PO/PB/1/1661/13C2n23, 1661 (2)
- 5. An Act for the reviving a Settlement of certain Lands on John Orlibeare for Life, the Remainder to the Sons of the said John successively and the Heirs Males of their Bodies, &c.,

HL/PO/PB/1/1661/13C2n27, 1661 (2)

1662

- 6. An Act to enable the Bishop of London to lease out the Tenements, new built upon the Scite of his Palace in London,
 - HL/PO/PB/1/1662/14C2n40, 1662 (2)
- 7. An Act to enable Rowland Okeover Esquire, to sell certain Lands in the County of Derby,

HL/PO/PB/1/1662/14C2n67, 1662 (2)

1663

8. An Act to enable Sir John Packington and his Trustees, to sell or otherwise dispose of certain Lands, for the Payment of his Debts, and raising Portions for his younger

Children, HL/PO/PB/1/1663/15C2n32, 1663 (3)

1665

9. An Act for settling the Estate of Sir Robert Carr, Baronet, HL/PO/PB/1/1664/16&17C2n20, 1665 (4)

1667

- 10. An Act to enable a Sale of Lands for Payment of the Debts of Henry Kendall Esquire, HL/PO/PB/1/1666/18&19C2n29, 1667 (7)
- 11. An Act for settling an Estate in Trust for the Benefit of Mrs. Elizabeth Pride and her Children,

HL/PO/PB/1/1666/18&19C2n25, 1667 (7)

12. An Act for Sale of a Messuage in Chiswicke, for Payment of the Debts of Edward Russell Esquire,

HL/PO/PB/1/1666/18&19C2n22, 1667 (7)

13. An Act to enlarge the Time given by a former Act, for Redemption of Mortgages made by the Earl of Cleaveland,

HL/PO/PB/1/1666/18&19C2n6, 1667 (7)

1668

14. An Act for enabling of Sir William Juxon Knight and Baronet, Executor of the last Will and Testament of William Juxon, late Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, to recover Part of his Estate,

HL/PO/PB/1/1667/20C2n15, 1668 (8)

15. An Act for Confirmation of the Settlement of Sir Kingsmyll Lucy Baronet, in the said Act mentioned, and for transferring over some other Part of the real Estate of Sir Richard Lucy Knight and Baronet deceased, from Francis Lucy Esquire,

HL/PO/PB/1/1667/20C2n12, 1668 (8)

1670

16. An Act to enable Francis Courtney Esquire, to join with Sir William Courtney his Father, in a Conveyance for settling their Estate,

HL/PO/PB/1/1670/22&23C2n16, 1670 (10)

17. An Act to enable Elizabeth, Mary and Letitia Hammond, to sell certain Lands in the Bill mentioned,

HL/PO/PB/1/1670/22&23C2n21, 1670 (10)

18. An Act for confirming Purchasers Estates, and for settling the Differences between the Lady Elizabeth Lee and the Daughters and Coheirs of the late Earl of Downe, HL/PO/PB/1/1670/22C2n18, 1670 (10)

1677

- 19. An Act to enable Sir Edward Hungerford Knight of the Bath, to make Leases for Years of Hungerford House in the Strand, in the Parish of Saint Martins in the Fields in the County of Middlesex, and of certain Houses and Tenements thereunto adjoining, HL/PO/PB/1/1677/29C2n16, 1670 (16)
- 20. An Act to enable Herbert Awbrey and his Trustees to sell Lands for Payment of his Debts,

HL/PO/PB/1/1677/29C2n18, 1670 (16)

1678

21. An Act to make good a Mortgage made by John Forth, deceased, to Thomas Cooke and Nicholas Carey, and for making Provision for Henry Forth Son of the said John Forth,

HL/PO/PB/1/1678/30C2n18, 1678 (17)

1685

22. An Act for rebuilding the Earl of Powis's House in Lincoln's Inn Fields lately demolished by Fire,

HL/PO/PB/1/1685/1J2n22, 1685 (23)

1689

23. An Act to make good a Recovery suffered by the Earl of Peterborough and Lord Mordant,

HL/PO/PB/1/1688/1W&Ms1n37, 1689 (24)

24. An Act for the better assuring the Manor of Silton, and demising other Lands and Tenements in Silton in the County of Salop, unto Joseph Soley Gent. and his Heirs, HL/PO/PB/1/1688/1W&Ms1n35, 1689 (24)

1690

25. An Act to enable Sir Edwin Sadler to sell Lands for Payment of Debts, HL/PO/PB/1/1689/2W&Mn27, 1690 (25)

26. An Act to enable Philip Hildeyard Esquire, to sell Lands in Surrey, and to settle Lands in Lincolnshire in lieu thereof,

HL/PO/PB/1/1690/2&3W&Mn29, 1690 (27)

27. An Act to give Catherine Lady Cornbury certain Powers to act as if she were of full Age,

HL/PO/PB/1/1690/2&3W&Mn15, 1690 (27)

28. An Act to enable Elizabeth Montague Widow, to let Leases for Years of Houses and Ground in Stepney, in the County of Middlesex,

HL/PO/PB/1/1690/2&3W&Mn9, 1690 (27)

1692

29. An Act to vest the Estate late of Henry Drax Esquire, deceased, in Thomas Shatterden Gentleman, and to enable the said Thomas Shatterden and others, to whom the said Estate is devised, to make a Jointure,

HL/PO/PB/1/1691/3&4W&Mn43, 1692 (28)

30. An Act for enabling Sir Dudley Cullum Baronet, to raise Monies to pay his Brothers and Sisters Portions,

HL/PO/PB/1/1691/3&4W&Mn23 1692 (28)

- 31. An Act to vest certain Messuages, Lands and Tenements, in Thorp Langton, and elsewhere, in the County of Leicester, in Trustees, to be sold for Payment of the Debts of Richard Roberts Esquire, and for raising Portions for his Daughters, HL/PO/PB/1/1691/3W&Mn13, 1692 (28)
- 32. An Act for the vesting several Manors, Lands and Rents in the Counties of Lincoln, Berks and Devon, in Trustees, to be sold for the buying other Manors and Lands to be settled for the same, or the like Uses, as those to be sold are now settled, HL/PO/PB/1/1691/3&4W&Mn16, 1692 (28)
- 33. An Act to vest certain Lands of William Molyneux Gentleman, in Trustees, for raising the Sum of 2,000l. for paying the Portions to his younger Brothers and Sisters, pursuant to a Decree in the Court of Chancery,

HL/PO/PB/1/1691/3&4W&Mn26, 1692 (28)

1693

34. An Act for exchanging of several small Parcels of Land in the Parish and Manor of Fulham, belonging to the Bishoprick of London, and Part of the Bishoprick of London, for other Lands of the like Value, to Charles Earl of Monmouth, and his Heirs, HL/PO/PB/1/1692/4&5W&Mn38, 1693 (29)

1694

35. An Act to enable Sir Charles Barrington Baronet, to settle a Jointure on Dame Bridget his Wife, and to make Provision for their younger Children, HL/PO/PB/1/1694/5&6W&Mn18, 1694 (30)

36. An Act to enable Thomas Earl of Thanet, and the Honourable Sackville Tufton his Brother, to make a Lease for sixty Years of Thanet House in the Parish of St. Botolph, Aldersgate, to commence after the Remainder of the Term of one and thirty Years now in being, &c.

HL/PO/PB/1/1694/5&6W&Mn19, 1694 (30)

1695

37. An Act for confirming two Indentures tripartite, the one of Lease, the other of Release, made between the Right Honourable Thomas Earl of Thanet Island of the first Part, the Honorable Sackville Tufton Esquire, of the second Part, the Honourable William Cheyne Esquire, and Sir Charles Tufton Knight, of the third Part, and the Estates thereby settled,

HL/PO/PB/1/1694/6&7W&Mn22, 1695 (31)

1696

38. An Act for making good the last Will of Sir William Barkham Baronet, deceased, and vesting of Lands in Trustees, to be sold for Payment of his Debts, and making Provision for his Children,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n59, 1696 (32)

39. An Act for vesting several Messuages and Lands belonging to Samuel Powel Esquire, in Trustees, for Payment of his Debts,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n10, 1696 (32)

40. An Act to enable John Fownes Esquire, to sell certain Lands in the County of Devon, which were settled on his Marriage, and to settle other Lands of an equal Value to the same Uses, HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n24, 1696 (32)

41. An Act for vesting the Manor of Madely, in the County of Salop, in Trustees, for certain Purposes therein mentioned,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n8, 1696 (32)

42. An Act to enable Trustees to sell Part of the Manor of Barkhamstead, and pay off the Incumbrances charged on the same, and to lay out the Overplus in an Estate to be settled as the said Manor is now vested,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n20, 1696 (32)

43. An Act to enable Trustees to sell a Messuage, Garden and Out House, in Lincoln's Inn Fields, late Sir Robert Sawyer's Knight, deceased, and for purchasing other Lands and Tenements to be settled to the same Uses,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n54, 1696 (32)

44. An Act to enable Sir Thomas Pope Blount Baronet, to make a Settlement upon the Marriage of his eldest Son, HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n7, 1696 (32)

45. An Act to enable Trustees to raise Money for the making a wet Dock, and improving the Estate of the Marquess and Marchioness of Tavistock, at Rotherhithe, in the County of Surrey,

HL/PO/PB/1/1695/7&8W3n51, 1696 (32)

1697

46. An Act to enable Nicholas Goodwin the Elder, and Nicholas Goodwin the Younger, to sell the Manor of Winslow in the County of Bucke, and with the Monies arising thereby, and other Monies to be advanced by the said Nicholas Goodwin the Elder, to purchase Lands of a greater yearly Value, to be settled to the same Uses as the said Manor is now settled,

HL/PO/PB/1/1696/8&9W3n25, 1697 (33)

- 47. An Act for settling the Estate of Mary Savile an Infant, upon her Marriage, HL/PO/PB/1/1696/8&9W3n22
- 48. An Act to supply a Defect in an Act for enabling Oliver Neve Esquire, to sell two Houses in London, and for settling Lands in the County of Norfolk, of greater Value, to the same Uses,

HL/PO/PB/1/1696/8&9W3n42, 1697 (33)

49. An Act for vesting certain Messuages, Lands and Tenements, late of Charles Milson deceased, in Trustees, to sell for Payment of Debts and Legacies, and lay out the Surplus Money in a Purchase of Lands for the Use of Edward Milson and his Heirs, according to the Will of the said Charles Milson,

HL/PO/PB/1/1696/8&9W3n24, 1697 (33)

1698

50. An Act for vesting in Trustees, to be sold, certain Lands of George Hewit Esquire, lying in the County of Middlesex, settled upon his Marriage, and with Money arising thereby, for purchasing other Lands in Leicestershire, where his Estate and Seat lies, to be settled to the same Uses,

HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n34, 1698 (34)

- 51. An Act for the better enabling Sir Ralph Hare Baronet, to make a Jointure, and settle his Estate, and raise Portions and Maintenances for his younger Children, HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n33, 1698 (34)
- 52. An Act for settling the Estate of John Hall, a Lunatick, subject to a Debt charged thereon,

HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n28, 1698 (34)

- 53. An Act for confirming and establishing the Administration of the Goods and Chattels of Sir William Godolphin Knight, deceased, HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n31, 1698 (34)
- 54. An Act to enable certain Trustees therein named, to make, renew and fill up Leases of the Estate of Sir Coppleston Warwick Bamfylde, during the Minority of the said Sir

- Coppleston Warwick Bamfylde, and John Bamfylde his Brother, HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n27, 1698 (34)
- 55. An Act for securing the Portions intended by Sir William Walter Baronet, deceased, for his Children by the Lady Mary Walter, his second Wife, and for preventing all Doubts which might arise upon the Construction of the Articles and Will therein mentioned, HL/PO/PB/1/1697/9&10W3n87, 1698 (34)

1699

- 56. An Act for the enabling Cyriat Weslyd Esquire, to sell some Part of his Estate, which by Articles upon his Marriage was agreed to be settled upon his Wife and Children, and for settling of other Part of his Estate, of better Value, to the same Uses, HL/PO/PB/1/1698/10&11W3n70, 1699 (35)
- 57. An Act for the sale of the Manor of Lordington alias Lurtington and Whitwey, and divers Lands in the County of Sussex, and for laying out 5,000l. in purchasing other Lands to be settled in lieu thereof,
 - HL/PO/PB/1/1698/10&11W3n63, 1699 (35)
- 58. An Act for Sale of the Estate of Zenebia Hough, for the Payment of the Debts of the Husband, and other Uses,
 - HL/PO/PB/1/1698/10&11W3n77, 1699 (35)

1700

59. An Act for rectifying a Mistake in the Marriage Settlement of Thomas Hopwood Gentleman, on Elizabeth his Wife in order to raise Portions for younger Children, and to pay Debts,

HL/PO/PB/1/1700/13W3n18, 1700 (36)

1701

- 60. An Act for the vesting and settling certain Manors and Lands in south Pickenham, and other Places in the County of Norfolk, in Trustees, to be sold, and for laying out the Monies arising by Sale thereof, in the Purchase of other Lands to be settled to such and the same Uses as the said Manors and Lands, so to be vested, are and stand settled,
 - HL/PO/PB/1/1700/13W3n18, 1701 (38)
- 61. An Act for vesting a Messuage and Lands in Stevenage, in the County of Hertford, the Estate of Richard Nodes, in Trustees, to be sold for making a Provision for his Wife and Children, equal to the Provision secured to them out of the said Estate, HL/PO/PB/1/1700/13W3n23, 1701 (38)
- 1702 began under William III, ended under Anne

- 62. An Act to enable Trustees to sell certain Lands, Tithes and Tenements, for the Payment of the Debts of Francis Purefoy Esquire, deceased, HL/PO/PB/1/1702/13&14W3&1As1n17, 1702 (38)
- 63. An Act for the settling and vesting divers Manors and Lands of Francis Wightwicke, an Infant, lying in the County of Stafford, in Trustees, to enable them to settle and convey the same, upon the Marriage of the said Francis Wightwicke, HL/PO/PB/1/1702/13&14W3&1As1n20, 1702 (38)
- 64. An Act for vesting certain Messuages and Tenements in the County of Bedford and Middlesex, in Trustees, to be sold, and for purchasing Lands or Rents, to be settled to the same Uses, HL/PO/PB/1/1702/13&14W3&1As1n51, 1702 (38)
- 65. An Act for vesting several Messuages, Lands and Tenements in the Parish of Whitchurch, in the County of Chester, in Trustees, to be sold for paying off the Incumbrances charged thereon, and for other Uses therein mentioned, HL/PO/PB/1/1702/13&14W3&1As1n18, 1702 (38)

B.2 Appendix Figures & Tables

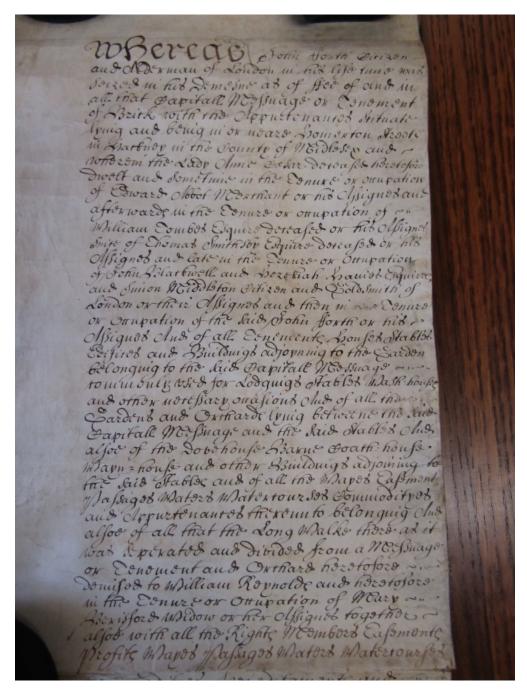
Table B.1: Preamble Clauses: Examples of Conveyances and Appeals

		1 C /	1. 1
1. Primary Conveyance	n	share of acts	coding or example
life estate-entail settlement	38	0.58	settle land with entail, remainders, or trust for charges
strict settlement	13	0.2	trust to preserve contingent remainders
other conveyance	11	0.17	wills, previous acts of parliament, decrees in chancery
religious corporation	2	0.03	Church of England (Bishop of London)
2. Appeal: Economic event or condition			
incomplete transaction	33	0.51	have sithence sould the said lands [] soe the Purchaser received the profitts of the said Lands and the purchase money not paid now
costs debts or family charges	20	0.31	[rents] not being sufficient to discharge
		0.40	and pay the interest and Burthens
management	8	0.12	[lands] lye at a great distance from the dwelling house [] and cannot be soe conveniently managed by him [] and will cost a great Summe of Money to put the same into repair
accident, mistake	14	0.21	the said John Pozy absconding himselfe and being run away into parts beyond the seas is credibly reported and decaying in his or his Agents hands
opportunity for sale, investment	13	0.2	conceiveing that he may make to himselfe and his family a great advantage
marriage	7	0.11	A marriage is intended to be had
none stated	2	0.03	
3. Appeal: Legal constraint			
life tenant barred	30	0.46	by reason of the aforesaid Settlement
minority	26	0.4	which cannot be done by your said subjects they beinge [] under the age of one and twenty yeares
breach of trust	4	0.06	But for asmuch as the said [trustees] cannot sell [] without being guilty of a breach of the trust
general law	4	0.06	according to the Lawes of this realm no man can give power
pretense or claims can be made	8	0.12	some pretence of clayme may be made by the daughters
none stated	2	0.03	
4. Proposed reorganization			
*pay debts	26	0.40	to sell some part thereof to raise moneyes whereby to discharge the debts
*pay family charges e.g. for children (portions), widows (jointures)	15	0.23	and is disabled to provide for them [children] without the sale of some part of his lands
*purchase land or replace	11	0.17	being willing imediately upon sale thereof to purchase and settle some other estate of an equall value
none stated	26	0.40	

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Classification of clauses in estate acts of parliament. Coded as an indicator if clause falls into certain category, i.e. act contains specific clause or not. 1. Land conveyances - mutually exclusive. 2. Appeal: economic - not mutually exclusive. 3. Appeal: legal constraint - not mutually exclusive. * - type usually corresponds to title of act. See Appendix Section B.1 for details on coding.

Figure B.1: Example of Preamble Section



Notes: Forth Estate Act, 30 CII, c. 18. Figure shows the beginning of a preamble section of estate act.

Figure B.2: Example of Enactment Section

Mischisfartion of Mispurrason without anacht ithacettour please from anost Exertaint arcogests वर्षात्र मिलाडिए डलांटि of मिरडवार दिमार्कांव पेरालां with Meconsent of the said form Egymen Reworld surviving Evenster and of Ralon Esquiro Clots to Brother of the said Sanita and of the said Benom and Oldigail Effort it may be Enarted Find Gett Encicled by fre kingo most Exithet Majestit by and with the advirt and construt of the Louds spirituall and Eduporalland the Commond in this prisent Marliament assembled and by the author rity of the samt Ehat all and singular the said . messuaged cottage Lando' Etutuento hereditamont and promisses with the apportments shall be Butfouth stated and the same are and are forthe streamed to be absolutely wto ted in the said chomas Orthis Rull and Rio Reinto Es Rivand Hour owns use Ist the said Chomas 4 Tynshull or Rio Lours paying outo the said Bonom Trough and Aligail Bough ou theur hesperfine Extrutore and Oldinimist a tours the summe of ERwet Rundutd poindo by Equall contioned and the further summe of start Runder poundo to the said Beno bia Bough fit Extrutoro or Moministratoro (whost Broupt strall brasufficient DistRange for the same) before the Heast of Saint Boken Raptist Our thousand six thundred unty and un 120 Boit further Enacted by the authority

Notes: Hough Estate Act, 10&11 WIII, c. 77. Figure shows the beginning of an enactment section of estate act.

Table B.2: Enactment Clauses: Examples of Economic, Legal, and Amendment Clauses

*sale 34 0.52 shall and may as speedlile and as soone as may be sell the reversion of the said Manor from time to time to demise or lease the [] *mortgage 8 0.12 to make any Lease or Leases mortgage or mortgages of all or any part or parts of the messuages of all or any part of parts of the said flam parts of the said of parts of the part	1. Economic transactions	n	share of acts	coding or example
*Rortgage 8 0.12 from time to time to demise or lease the [] *mortgage 8 0.12 to make any Lease or Leases mortgage or mortgages of all or any part or parts of the messuages shall and may lend out the said one thousand pounds and every part thereof upon the best securities and at the best rate of interest that the said one thousand pounds and every part thereof upon the best securities and at the best rate of interest that they by reasonable endeavour can obtaine are hereby adjudged and Enacted subject to the Provision herein after mentioned to [] heire apparent of the said Sir Robert Carr the Elder for and during the Terme of his naturall Life without impeachment of or for any mannor of wast and after the Determination of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin (upon trust) for supporting contingent remainders restore to estates (1), exchange lands (1), power to discharge bonds, obligations (1), enclose and drain land (1 power to discharge bonds, obligations (1), enclose and drain land (1 power transaction of the said surrendered and the use and uses therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and be ratified and confirmed amend title or rights 7 o.11 bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed **Amend settlement** discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred years [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extin	*sale	34	0.52	v 1
*mortgage 8	*lease	13	0.2	from time to time to demise or lease the $[\dots]$
settlement	*mortgage	8	0.12	to make any Lease or Leases mortgage or mortgages
*settlement 8 0.12 are hereby adjudged and Enacted subject to the Provision herein after mentioned to [] heire apparent of the said Sir Robert Carr the Elder for and during the Terme of his naturall Life without impeachment of or for any mannor of wast and after the Determination of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the extra settle in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the extra settle in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Seising power to distance and and supporting and after the Determination of the Estate in the Actuall possession and Seisin [upon trust] for supporting contingent remainders of the Seising power to distance and the use and uses therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premises [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement does stand and beer ratified and confirmed and confirmed been and and the said and been ratified and confirmed been stated. The said and the person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him had person and vested trust to a said premiser shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and may be charged or chargeable	loan	9	0.14	shall and may lend out the said one thousand pounds and every part thereof upon the best securities and at the best
for supporting contingent remainders restore to estates (1), exchange lands (1), power to discharge bonds, obligations (1), enclose and drain land (1 2. Legal clauses good at law 25 0.38 protect transaction 19 0.29 shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed amend title or rights 7 0.11 bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limit and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security	*settlement	8	0.12	are hereby adjudged and Enacted subject to the Provision herein after mentioned to [] heire apparent of the said Sir Robert Carr the Elder for and during the Terme of his naturall Life without impeachment of or for any mannor of wast and after the Determination of the Estate
other 4 0.06 restore to estates (1), exchange lands (1), power to discharge bonds, obligations (1), enclose and drain land (1 none stated 10 0.15 2. Legal clauses good at law 25 0.38 every such surrender and surrendered and the use and uses therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premises [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfult to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses				
none stated 10 0.15 2. Legal clauses good at law 25 0.38 every such surrender and surrendered and the use and uses therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and beer ratified and confirmed amend title or rights 7 0.11 bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	other	4	0.06	restore to estates (1), exchange lands (1),
good at law 25 0.38 every such surrender and surrendered and the use and uses therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed amend title or rights 7 0.11 bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	none stated	10	0.15	1
therein [] shall be good and effectuall in the law shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed amend title or rights 7 0.11 bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or security [] hath on the premisses	2. Legal clauses			
shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming or to claime by from or under him the foresaid deed of settlement all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	good at law	25	0.38	· ·
*confirm 17 0.26 all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend doe stand and bee ratified and confirmed bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested trust trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	protect transaction	19	0.29	shall and may peaceably and quietly have hold and enjoy the said premisses [] as he or they shall so purchase for such estate or estates [] against the said John Fownes [] and all other person and persons whatsoever claiming
trust 10 0.15 That each of the said Trustees shall be only answerable for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	*confirm	17	0.26	all and every the grants [] and agreements therein conteyend
for his own respective Act and Acts and not for the act or acts of the other of them limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable amend family charges 11 0.17 that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	amend title or rights	7	0.11	bonds and obligations are hereby transferred unto and vested
limits to act 7 0.11 that this Act nor any clause or sentence herein contained shall extend or bee construed none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	trust	10	0.15	for his own respective Act and Acts and
none stated 19 0.30 3. Amend settlement discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives protect family charges 10 0.15 that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	limits to act	7	0.11	that this Act nor any clause or sentence
discharge 16 0.24 the severall termes of five hundred yeares [] for raysing portions for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	none stated	19	0.30	notion contained shall entered of see contract
for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further or other portions shall or may be charged or chargeable that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	3. Amend settlement			
amend family charges 11 0.17 that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors [] not exceeding one thousand pounds per anno to any wife or wives that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	discharge	16	0.24	for the said Daughters shall be and are hereby utterly extinguished and made voyd and that no further
protect family charges 10 0.15 that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security [] hath on the premisses	amend family charges	11	0.17	that it shall and may be lawfull to [] by and writeing under his hand [] to limitt and appoint any part of the said mannors []
	protect family charges	10	0.15	that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be construed to extend in an wise to lessen or diminish any estate or security
	none stated	36	0.55	U nate on the premisses

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702. All acts have either an economic or a legal clause. Notes: Classification of clauses in estate acts of parliament. Coded as an indicator if clause falls into certain category, i.e. act contains specific clause or not. 1. Enactment: economic - not mutually exclusive. 2. Enactment: legal - not mutually exclusive. 3. Enactment: amend settlement - not mutually exclusive. * - type usually corresponds to title of act. See Appendix Section B.1 for details on coding.

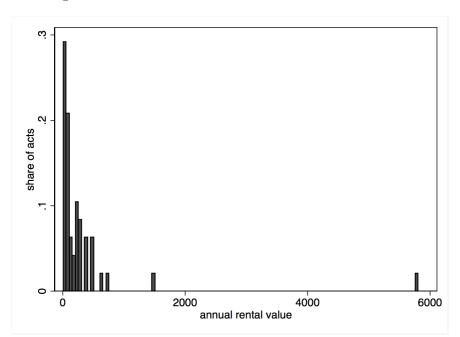


Figure B.3: Annual Rental Income Recorded in Acts

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: 48 acts record an annual rental income of a property. Histogram is binned at 50 income intervals.

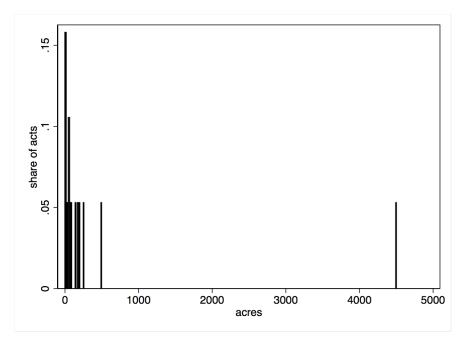


Figure B.4: Acreage Recorded in Acts

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: 18 acts record acreage of their property. Histogram is binned at 10 acre intervals.

Table B.3: Types of Petitioners and Trustees in Estate Acts, 1660-1702

	n	share of acts	st. dev.	min	max
Panel A: Petitioners					
nobility	13	0.20	0.40	0	1
titled gentry	20	0.31	0.47	0	1
esquires or gentlemen	39	0.60	0.49	0	1
clergy	3	0.05	0.21	0	1
professional	5	0.08	0.29	0	1
mp or related	31	0.48	0.50	0	1
couple	27	0.42	0.50	0	1
female	8	0.12	0.33	0	1
Panel B: Trustees					
nobility	7	0.11	0.31	0	1
titled gentry	14	0.22	0.41	0	1
esquires or gentlemen	32	0.49	0.50	0	1
professional	10	0.15	0.36	0	1
of an inn (lawyer)	6	0.09	0.29	0	1
of London	12	0.18	0.39	0	1
female	5	0.08	0.27	0	1

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: No classification is mutually exclusive. Acts are coded as having a type of petitioner or trustee or not. See Appendix Section B.1 for details.

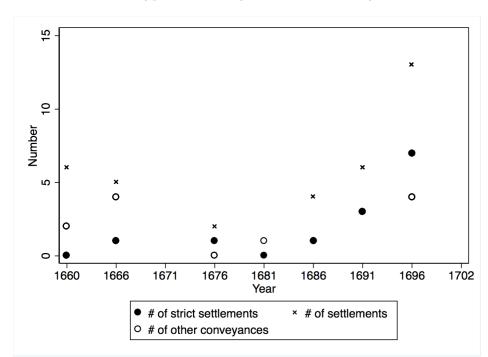


Figure B.5: Evolution in Types of Conveyances addressed by Estate Acts, 1660-1702

Source: random sample of 65 estate acts, 1660-1702.

Notes: Number of acts naming primary type of conveyance binned at five year intervals. See appendix for coding. Settlements: life estate-entail settlements. Strict settlement: settlement with clause "trust to preserve contingent remainders." Other conveyances: other types of conveyances (e.g. bargain and sale, Act of Parliament, common recovery). Parliament did not meet 1668, 1671-72, 1676, 1680, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Appendix C

Appendix: Chapter 3

C.1 Data Appendix

C.1.1 Coding and Description of Main Variables

This appendix provides a list, brief background, and references for MP characteristics.

Political parties

- 1660-1689: Court and Opposition from division lists. See list below.
- 1690-1702: Whig and Tory from Bogart (2016).

Occupations

- lawyer: indicator if an MP had been called to the bench (qualified as a barrister) or an ancient at an inn of court before or during a given year. See Inner Temple Archives on the legal profession and glossary (http://www.innertemplearchives.org.uk/legal_profession.html).
- local government positions regulated by a town or borough' charter; see Encyclopaedia Britannica (1911) for brief background on the positions.
 - Recorder: indicator if an MP was a town recorder during a given year. Judicial officer who recorded local court proceedings.
 - Custos rotulorum: indicator if an MP was a custos rotulorum during a given year.
 an important county official who kept a county's records.
 - Mayor and alderman indicator if an MP held position during a given year. Both held prerogatives in towns and governments.

- Common councilman indicator if an MP served on a town's common council in a given year. Represented the voice of the commonality in local governments.
- commercial and trading interests MPs who held a position in a trading or merchant company, association, or society before or while they were elected to parliament.
 - I code any MP who held a position in a "company", "merchant", "adventurers", "mineral society" or "bank."
 - overseas trading companies East India Company; Royal African Company; Hudson Bay Company; Levant Company; Muscovy Company; Virginia Company; New England Company; N.W. America Trading Company; Eastland Company of Newcastle.
 - domestic corporations Goldsmith's Company; Haberdashers' Company; Scriveners' Company; Royal Fishery Company; Drapers' Company; Grocers' Company; Clothworkers' Company; Cutlers' Company; Saltmakers' Company; Shipwrights' Company; Skinners' Company; Fishmongers' Company; Mercers' Company; Brewers' Company.
 - merchant Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle or Bristol; Merchant Taylors' Company.
 - mines and minerals Society for Mineral and Battery Works; Royal Mines Company; Mines Company; Hostmens' Company; Saltpetre Company
 - included in all companies: Bank of Scotland, Bank of England; Company of Scotland; Honorable Artillery Company.
- state offices see list in Henning (1983): Surveys: Appendix V: Officers of State.
- royal household selected positions from 'Introduction: Administrative structure and work', in Office-Holders in Modern Britain: Volume 11 (Revised); Court Officers, 1660-1837, ed. R O Bucholz (London, 2006), pp. xx-xxxvii. British History Online http://www.british-history.ac.uk/office-holders/vol11/xx-xxxvii.
 - Gentlemen or groom of the bedchamber "One gentleman of the Bedchamber provided close attendance on the Sovereign per week. His duties included assisting the King at his dressing, waiting on him when he ate in private, guarding access to him in his bedchamber and closet and providing noble companionship, generally. The offices of gentleman of the bedchamber were in the gift of the Crown."
 - Groom of the privy chamber responsible for manning the doors into the privy chamber.
 - secretary or treasurer to a member of the royal family
 - cofferer of the household -" was the principal accounting officer of the Household Below Stairs and paid the wages and board wages of all servants below stairs and in the stables, and many in the chamber as well. He was appointed by royal warrant. The remuneration amounted to £500 consisting of wages of £100 and board wages of £400. This officer was also allowed lodgings and the right to take poundage of 6d. in the pound on the bills and salaries which passed through his office. Early in the eighteenth century this came to over £2,000 per annum."

Other characteristics: education and birth order

- Cambridge: indicator if MP attended Cambridge before or during a given year.
- Oxford: indicator if MP attended Oxford before or during a given year.
- first son: indicator if MP was the first or only son.

Electoral variables

- before 1660 indicator if MP was elected to parliament anytime before 1660.
- borough indicator if MP represented a borough.
- contest indicator if MP was elected in a contest. Collected from B.D. Henning (1983): Appendix IX: Franchises and Contested Elections and Hayton et al. (2002): Appendix XXII: Contested elections.
- constituency in Middlesex: indicator if MP represented London, Westminster, or Middlesex.

C.1.2 Political Party from 1660 to 1689: Division Lists

Format

• year; title; source

Court

- 1. 1661; list, by Wharton, of 'Moderate men'; Jones, GF Trevallyn. 1964. "Composition and Leadership of the Presbyterian Party in the Convention." *The English Historical Review* 79: 332-54.
- 2. 1664; Court Dependants; Jones, JR. 1961. "Court Dependants in 1664." Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research 34: 84-91.
- 3. Sept.-Nov. 1669; Court Supporters; Browning, A. Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby and Duke of Leeds, 1632-1712 Vol. III: 34-44.
- 4. c. May 1671; list of Court supporters with satirical notices; Browning, A. *Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby and Duke of Leeds, 1632-1712* Vol. III: 33.
- 5. c. 1673; list of the Court party with satirical notices; de Beer, ES. 1933-34. "Members of the Court Party in the House of Commons, 1670-1678." Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research 11: 1-2.
- 6. Apr. 1675-Feb. 1676; King's Servants and dependents'; Browning, A. Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby and Duke of Leeds, 1632-1712 Vol. III: 62-5.
- 7. 1677. list of Court supporters with satirical comments; de Beer, ES. 1933-34. "Members of the Court Party in the House of Commons, 1670-1678." *Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research* 11: 1-2.

Opposition

- 8. (not used in analysis) 1660; Names of the members of the Commons howse, 1660; Jones, GF Trevallyn. 1964. "Composition and Leadership of the Presbyterian Party in the Convention." *The English Historical Review* 79: 307-30.
- 9. (not used in analysis) 6 Nov. 1660; List of persons to whom papers are delivered in and to be delivered; *The English Historical Review* 79: 348-49.
- 10. 1661; "Wharton's friends"; Jones, GF Trevallyn. 1964. "Composition and Leadership of the Presbyterian Party in the Convention." *The English Historical Review* 79: 332-54.
- 11. 1677-8; the Earl of Shaftesbury's list of supporters and opponents of the Court; Haley, KHD. "Shaftesbury's Lists of the Lay Peers and Members of the House of Commons, 1677-8." Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research 42: 95-105.
- 12. 1679; Shaftesbury's 'Worthy Men', those likely to support the Exclusion Bill; Jones, JR. 1957. "Shaftesbury's Worthy Men: A Whig View of the Parliament of 1679" Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research 30: 236-41.
- 13. 1686-7. Danby's list of the opposition to James II in Parliament; Browning, A. *Thomas Osborne*, Earl of Danby and Duke of Leeds, 1632-1712 Vol. III: 155-7.

Exclusion (for, against, absent)

14. 21 May 1679; An Exclusion Bill Division List; Browning, A and DJ Milne. 1950. "An Exclusion Bill Division List" *Bulletin of Institute for Historical Research* 23: 207-25.

C.2 Appendix Figures and Tables

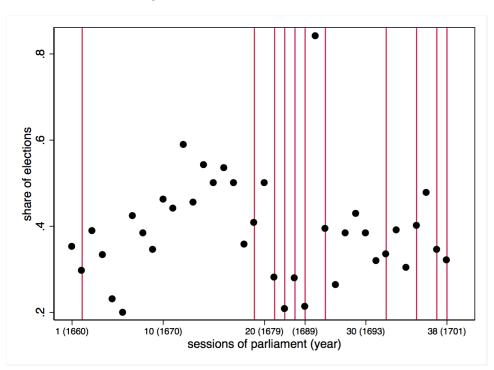


Figure C.1: Contested Elections

Notes: Figure shows share of elections that were contested (more than one candidate ran for the seat). Vertical lines mark general elections and new parliaments. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

Table C.1: Royal Patronage

	166	51-1685	1689-1702	
	(1) court	(2) opposition	(3) tory	(4) whig
royal household	0.88*** (0.07)	-0.20 (0.15)	0.37** (0.16)	-0.02 (0.22)
local government	0.00 (0.07)	-0.00 (0.11)	0.33*** (0.09)	-0.32*** (0.10)
Observations occupation other characteristics	11,056 yes yes	11,056 yes yes	8,044 yes yes	8,044 yes yes
electoral parliament FE	yes yes	yes	yes	yes

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report multinomial estimates relative to baseline of no party affiliation. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688.

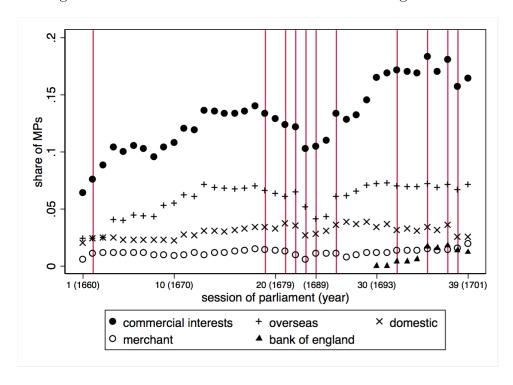


Figure C.2: Members with Commercial and Trading Interests

Notes: Figure shows share of MPs that held a position in a company before or while they were elected to parliament. Vertical lines mark general elections and new parliaments. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Commercial or trading interests is defined as an MP who held or was currently holding a position in a trading or merchant company (e.g. East India Company, Scriveners' Company, Royal African Company), a merchant association (e.g. Merchant Adventurers), mining society (e.g. Society of Mineral and Battery Works), and the Bank of England.

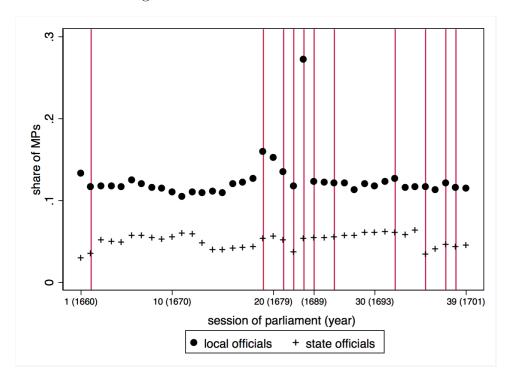


Figure C.3: Local and State Officials

Notes: Figure shows share of MPs who held a position in local or state government while also elected to parliament. Vertical lines mark general elections and new parliaments. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Local officials - MP was also mayors, alderman, common councilmen, sheriffs during the session; State - MP also held an office of the state.

Table C.2: Monarch and Local Governments

	167	9-1681	1685		
	(1) court	(2) opposition	(3) court	(4) opposition	
local government	0.07*** (0.02)	0.01 (0.02)	0.06* (0.03)	-0.05* (0.03)	
Observations	2,016	2,016	509	509	
R-squared	0.07	0.04	0.07	0.07	
occupation	yes	yes	yes	yes	
other characteristics	yes	yes	yes	yes	
electoral	yes	yes	yes	yes	
parliament FE	yes				

Notes: *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1. Standard errors in parentheses. All specifications report OLS estimates. Outcomes are indicators if MP is affiliated with the Court (column 1) or Opposition (column 2) during the Exclusion Parliaments; affiliated with the Court (column 3) or the Opposition (column 4) under James II.

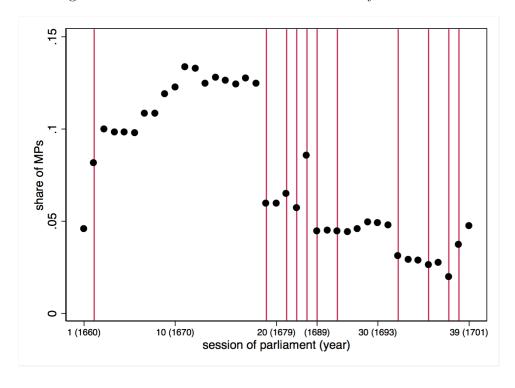


Figure C.4: Connections to the Monarch: Royal Household

Notes: Figure shows share of MPs with who held a position in the royal household during a session of parliament. Vertical lines mark general elections and new parliaments. Parliament did not meet in 1672, 1676, 1682-1684, 1686-1688. Position in royal household include those who were grooms of the bedchamber, privy chamber, secretary to a member of the royal family or the household, or cofferer of the household.